

---

This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

<https://books.google.com>















*Ben. Errero Pinx.*

*M. V. G. Gucht Sculp.*



*William Beveridge D.D.  
Lord Bishop of S<sup>t</sup>. Asaph.  
Ætatis Sue 71.*

THE TRUE  
**NATURE**  
OF THE  
**Christian Church,**  
THE  
*Office of its Ministers,*  
AND THE  
*Means of Grace Administred*  
*by them*  
EXPLAIN'D.  
IN TWELVE  
**SERMONS.**

---

By the Right Reverend Father in God  
**WILLIAM BEVERIDGE, D. D.,**  
Late Lord Bishop of *St. ASAPH.*

---

THE SECOND EDITION.

---

VOL. I.

---

LONDON:  
Printed by J. L. for R. SMITH, in *Exeter-*  
*Change in the Strand, 1709.*



THE  
OFFICE OF THE  
SECRETARY OF THE  
NAVY  
WASHINGTON, D. C.  
MAY 10 1918

# SEAL

OFFICE OF THE  
SECRETARY OF THE  
NAVY  
WASHINGTON, D. C.





ANNE R.

**W**HEREAS Our Trusty and Well-beloved Richard Smith of our City of London, Bookseller, has humbly represented unto Us, that he has, with great Labour and Expence, prepared for the Press a New Edition of the Sermons, and other Works written in English by the Right Reverend Father in God, Dr. William Beveridge, Bishop of St. Asaph, Deceased; and has therefore humbly besought Us to grant him our Royal Privilege and Licence for the sole Printing and Publishing thereof for the Term of Fourteen Years: We being willing to give all due Encouragement to Works of this Nature, tending to the Advancement of Piety and Learning, are graciously pleas'd to condescend to his Request: And do therefore, by these Presents, grant to him the said Richard Smith, his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, Our Royal Licence for the sole Printing and Publishing the English Works of the said late Bishop of St. Asaph, for the Term of Fourteen Years from the Date hereof; strictly forbidding all our Subjects within our Kingdoms and Dominions, to reprint the same, either in Whole, or in Part; or to import, buy, vend, utter, or distribute any Copies thereof reprinted beyond Seas, during the aforesaid Term of Fourteen Years, without the Consent and Approbation of the said Richard Smith, his Heirs, Executors, and Assigns, under his or their Hands and Seals first had and obtained, as they will answer the contrary at their Perils. Whereof the Master, Wardens, and Company of Stationers are to take Notice, that the same may be entred in their Register, and that due Obedience be rendred thereunto. Given at our Court at Kensington the 5th Day of June, 1708. in the Seventh Year of Our Reign.

By Her Majesty's Command.

A 3

SUNDERLAND.



---

---

THE  
P R E F A C E  
T O T H E  
R E A D E R.

**T**HE Right Reverend the late Bishop of *St. Asaph*, having left several *Sermons* and other *Treatises on Divine Subjects*, Written and Corrected with his own Hand; I, whom he was pleased to make his Executor, think my self under an indispensible Obligation to make them Publick, both in justice to the Author, and to the World. For though the great Modesty of that Reverend Prelate, which was equal to his Learning and other Vertues, would not suffer him in his Life-time to Publish many things in *English*; yet it would not be decent or fitting in me, who have had such great Obligations to him, to stifle his learned Labours, and to deprive his Memory of the Honour that will redound to it by the Publication of his Excellent and Pious Writings. Neither

## *The* PREFACE.

ther could I answer it to the World, to deprive the Church of *England* of so valuable a Treasure of Piety and Learning, which, I doubt not, will much more enrich the Church, than the Legacy of Money which his Lordship in great Charity left to it. For these Discourses explain its Doctrines, vindicate its Ceremonies and Discipline, with that pure and holy Zeal, and with that Clearness and Strength of Reason; that a serious and impartial Perusal of them, will, by the Blessing of God, animate and confirm its Friends, and gain over its greatest Enemies, to the Love and Admiration of its Establishment and Constitution.

Though this Prelate had lived long enough for himself, having arrived at a great Age, yet he lived too short a Time for the Church, to which he was a great Ornament, and a sincere and constant Friend in all Circumstances. And we have great Reason to be very thankful to the Divine Providence, which having deprived the Church of his living Labours, hath yet left it the means of profiting by his Preaching and Instructions.

*Timothy Gregory.*

A D-

# ADVERTISEMENT

From the BOOKSELLER,  
Concerning this *Second Edition* of the *First*  
Volume of Bishop *Beveridge's Sermons*, viz.

**T**HE *General Success* this Volume's *intrinsic*  
*Worth* must without controversy procure  
for it *hereafter* on the Minds of all well-dis-  
posed Christians, together with that *ample Acknow-*  
*ledgment thereof already* both from *Clergy* and *Laity*,  
which their kind Acceptance of its first Impression  
in a short Compass of Time sufficiently notifies,  
have encouraged an *Admirer* of the *Right Reverend*  
*Author's* to hand it to the Press with *more Care* than  
the haste of its *former Edition* would permit.

Not that he hath presumed to alter one Word of  
the *Original Manuscript*; but only, To compare the  
several *Texts* of *Scripture*; To *collate* the respective  
*Citations*; To substitute a Sermon more *suitable* for  
this Volume, N<sup>o</sup> VII. on *The Churches Establishment*  
*upon a Rock*, instead of that about *The Knowledge of*  
*Christ crucified*, which is *more properly* found in the  
Second Volume, N<sup>o</sup> VI. To add *Marginal Notes*,  
and an useful *Index* to the Whole.

These last Advantages, with others not mention'd,  
as they will, 'tis thought, better promote the *Edifi-*  
*cation* intended as well in this, as in all his other  
Writings, by the *Devout* and *Learned Compiler*: So  
if any pious Souls shall reap their *Spiritual Improve-*  
*ment* hereby, 'tis hoped they will allow the *Editor*  
the Benefit of their Prayers, which will abundantly  
compensate his Trouble.

As for the deceas'd *Author* of these, and many  
other incomparable Discourses, (which will soon be  
published) since He wants not any ones Prayers; The  
*Readers* of them will be excited rather to *praise*  
*God* on his Behalf, that He was pleased to raise up  
such

*Advertisement from the Bookseller.*

such an *Happy Instrument* as his Lordship was in the *National Church*, for *confirming Men in that Faith* which was once deliver'd unto the *Saints*, and for blessing his painful *Studies* so as to provide here for them, at this seasonable *Juncture*, such an *Armory* against *Papists*, *Schismatics*, *Socinians*, and other *Latitudinarians*, as will, fitly employ'd, effectually defend the *Rights of the Christian Church* against those pretended *Affertors*, but in truth, the most *enraged* and *desperate Invaders* of them.

To say no more at present of the *Incomparable Bishop*, the *Applause* of whose *Works* follow him in the *Universal Good* they do, and of whose most *Exemplary Life* a more particular *Account* may in *due Time* be expected: I shall only crave leave to be so just to his *Memory*, as not to stifle *one Testimony* that has been given of him *already*, which he pleas'd to take, instead of many, as 'twas directed by a *valuable Hand* to a *private Friend*: "I am very full of *Desire*  
" and *Concern* to return you *Thanks* for the *excell-*  
" *lent Sermons* of the late *Bishop of St. Asaph*; you  
" have given me some of the *best Books* in my *Study*;  
" I have no *Sermons* of *any Author* that I like so  
" well; I cannot express *how much* I esteem them  
" for the most *sensible* and *wise Piety* and *Devotion*; the  
" *useful* and *most proper* *Application* of *great Learn-*  
" *ing*; the *clearness* and *strength* of *Reasoning* and  
" *Judgment*; the true *Church of England Divinity* (as  
" I think) that there is in them; Shall we not have  
" some more of his *admirable Compositions*? I shall  
" most *zealously* and *studiously* recommend them; for  
" that I most heartily wish every *Clergyman*, at least,  
" in *England* had them, and that a great many of  
" the *Superior*, as well as *all the Inferior*, would learn  
" from them: I would have all the *Candidates* for  
" the *Ministry* in the *two Universities* in Possession of  
" them, and possess'd with the *Spirit* of them, &c.

T H E

---

---

# THE CONTENTS.

---

## SERMON I.

*At a Visitation.*

Christ's Presence with his Ministers in general.

MATTH. xxviii. 20. *page 1*

*And lo, I am with you always,  
even unto the end of the World.*

## SERMON II.

*At an Ordination.*

The Institution of Ministers.

ACTS i. 26. *page 47*

*And they gave forth their Lots,  
and the Lot fell upon Matthias.*

*And*



## The CONTENTS.

*And he was numbred with the  
Eleven Apostles.*

### S E R M O N III.

*At an Ordination.*

The Manner of Ordination in  
the Church of *England.*

2 COR. iv. 1. *page 81*

*Therefore seeing we have this Mi-  
nistry, as we have received  
Mercy, we faint not.*

### S E R M O N IV.

Salvation in the Church only un-  
der such a Ministry.

ACTS ii. 47. *page 107*

*And the Lord added to the Church  
daily such as should be saved.*

S E R-

The CONTENTS.

S E R M O N V.

The true Notion of Religious  
Worship.

JOHN xii. 20. page 159

*And there were certain Greeks  
among them, that came up to  
worship at the Feast.*

S E R M O N VI.

A Form of sound Words to be  
us'd by Ministers.

2 TIM. i. 13. page 195

*Hold fast the Form of sound  
Words which thou hast heard  
of me, in Faith and Love, which  
is in Christ Jesus.*

S E R-

# The CONTENTS.

## SERMON VII.

The Church Establish'd upon a  
Rock.

MATTH. XVI. 18. pa 232

*And I say also unto thee, that  
thou art Peter, and upon this  
Rock I will build my Church.*

## SERMON VIII.

Christianity, an Holy Priest-  
Hood.

I. PET. ii. 5. pag 257

*We also, as lively Stones, are built  
up a spiritual House, an holy  
Priesthood, to offer up spiritual  
Sacrifices acceptable to God by  
Jesus Christ.*

SER-

# The CONTENTS.

## S E R M O N IX.

*Before an Ordination.*

The Preparatory Duties for Holy Orders.

ACTS xiii. 3. page 285

*And when they had fasted and pray'd, and laid their Hands on them, they sent them away.*

## S E R M O N X.

The Efficacy of Faith in the Ministration of the Word.

I THESS. ii. 13. page 317

*For this Cause also thank we God without ceasing, because when ye received the Word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the Word of Men, but, as it is in Truth, the Word of God*

## The CONTENTS.

*God, which effectually worketh  
also in you that believe.*

### S E R M O N XI.

Ministers, the Ambassadors of  
Christ.

2 COR. V. 20. *pa* 351

*Now then we are Ambassadors for  
Christ, as though God did be-  
seech you by us; we pray you  
in Christ's stead, be ye recon-  
ciled to God.*

### S E R M O N XII.

The Sacerdotal Benediction in the  
Name of the Trinity, explain'd.

2 COR. xiii. 14. *pa* 379

*The Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ,  
and the Love of God, and the  
Communion of the Holy Ghost,  
be with you all.*

SERMON

---

---

# S E R M O N I.

---

## CHRIST'S Presence with his Ministers.

---

12.


M A T T H. XXVIII. 20.

*And lo, I am with you alway,  
even unto the end of the World.*

**W**E are here assembled in the Christ's Name and in the Presence Dominion of Jesus Christ our Lord, over the and not only ours, but the World as God and Man.

Lord of the whole World, having absolute and supreme Dominion over the whole Creation; not only as he is God, and the Creator of all things, but likewise as Man too: His humane Nature by reason of its Union to the Divine Person, and its perfect Obedience to the Divine Will, being exalted above, and invested with Power over all other Creatures whatsoever. For

**B** even

Vol. I.  even as he is the Son of Man, *There is given him Dominion, and Glory, and a Kingdom, that all People, Nations and Languages should serve him, Dan. 7. 14. And he having humbled himself, and become obedient to Death, even the death upon the Cross, therefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a Name, which is above every Name, that at the Name of Jesus every Knee should bow, of things in Heaven, and things in the Earth, and things under the Earth, and that every Tongue should confess, that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the Glory of God the Father, Phil. 2. 8, 9, 10, 11. Hence we find the holy Angels themselves waiting upon him at his Birth, in the Wilderness, in his Agony, and at his Resurrection, when they also acknowledged him to be the Lord, saying, Come and see the place where the Lord lay, Mat. 28. 6. Yea, all the Angels of God worship him, and are commanded so to do, Heb. 1. 6. And as for this lower World, he hath the Heathen for his Inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the Earth for his Possession, Psal. 2. 8. He hath Dominion from Sea to Sea, and from the River to the ends of the Earth, All Kings are bound to fall down before him, and all Nations to serve him, Psal. 72. 8, 11.*

All Creatures therefore, both in Heaven and Earth, are now subject to our Lord Christ, and he orders, governs, and disposeth

seth of them all according to his own Will and Pleasure, and so as shall most conduce to his own Glory, and his Church's Good. For God having raised him from the Dead, hath set him at his own right hand, far above all Principality and Power, and Might, and Dominion, and every Name that is named, not only in this World, but also, that which is to come; and hath put all things under his Feet, and made him Head over all things to the Church, which is his Body, the Fulness of him that filleth all in all, Eph. 1. 20, 21, 22, 23. He is the Head therefore not only of the Church, but over all things to or for the Church: So that nothing is exempted from his Dominion; nothing in Heaven, in Earth, or Hell, but what is subject to his Power; and therefore, nothing but what he can do for his own Catholick Church, which he hath purchased with his own Blood. He can assist it with his Grace, sanctify it by his Spirit, protect it by his Power, he can make all things in Heaven and Earth work together for its present Peace and future Glory, maugre all the Opposition that Men or Devils can make against it.

Thus much I thought good to premit concerning our Lord's Power, in order to the Explication of the Words which I have now read, because he himself thought so when he spake them. For being now about



Vol. I.

to send his Apostles into the World, to preach and propagate the Gospel which he had planted, he first shews them, as it were, his own Commission ; acquainting them with the Power he had to send them, and that in such Words as comprehend all that I have said concerning it, yea, as much as Words are able to express. *All Power, saith he, is given unto me in Heaven and in Earth, Go ye therefore and teach all Nations, &c.* ver. 18, 19. As if he should have said, I have now all Power over all things in the World, conferred upon me, by virtue whereof I command, empower, and commissionate you to enlarge, settle, and govern the Church that I have founded ; to administer the Sacraments that I have instituted ; and to persuade Mankind to embrace my Doctrine, to submit to my Discipline, to obey my Laws, and to come up to the Terms which I have procured for them, and propounded to them, in order to their Salvation.

*His Commission given to the Apostles.*

*Go ye therefore, says he, and teach all Nations : or as the Word μαθητεύσατε properly signifies, Make all Nations my Disciples, bring them over to my Religion, that both Jews and Gentiles may become one Flock under me, the great Shepherd and Bishop of their Souls. And this saith he, I would have you do two ways, First, by Baptizing them in the Name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost, and so initiating*

tiating them into my Church, upon their Serm. I.  
consenting to the Faith which I have published to the World. And *Secondly*, teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you, that so they may be my Disciples indeed, and not only by an outward Profession of the Faith which I have taught them, but likewise by performing sincere and universal Obedience to all the Commands that I have laid upon them.

When our Saviour gave this Charge to his Apostles, we may easily imagine that they were strangely surprized at the hearing of it. As when God bad *Moses* go and bring the Children of *Israel* out of *Ægypt*, *Moses* said unto him, *Who am I that I should go to Pharaoh, and that I should bring forth the Children of Israel out of Ægypt? Exod. 3. 11.* So when our Lord bad his Apostles go and bring all Nations out of their Idolatries and Superstitions, into the Profession of his Religion, the Apostles certainly could not but wonder at it, and say, at least within themselves, Who are we, a company of poor, weak and illiterate Men, that we should go to all Nations, that we should bring them off from the Religions of their Fore-fathers, and that we should ever persuade the World to believe in a crucified Christ? This our Lord foresaw, and therefore, as God answered *Moses*, saying, *Certainly*

B 3


Vol. I. *tainly I will be with thee*; so does our Saviour here encourage his Apostles, saying, *And behold, I am with you always, even to the end of the World.*

Words of very great Importance to us all, to the whole Church of God, especially to the Governours of it, and to those that administer the Word and Sacraments in it. For as much as all the Success that can be expected from the Execution of any Ecclesiastical Function, depends upon the performance of this Promise, which therefore our Lord has so Worded, that there is not a Word in it but what hath its Emphasis, and is much to be observed by us. As he himself seems to intimate, by prefacing it with *Behold*, take special Notice of what I now say unto you.

Hence therefore we shall *First*, very briefly consider the Words apart, that so we may come to the better understanding of the whole. *First*, saith he, *I am with you*, I, the eternal Son of God, and now become the Son of Man too; I, who have the Angels at my beck, and make the Devils tremble with my Looks; I, who in your sight have caused the Storms to cease, the Blind to see, the Lame to walk, the Dead to rise, only with a Word of my Mouth; I, who was delivered for your Offences,

*with his Ministers.*

7

fences, but am now rais'd again for your **Serm. I.**  
Justification; I who have all Power both in   
Heaven and Earth committed to me; *I am  
with you.* Not *I will* be with, but *I am* with  
you, in the Present Tense, minding them  
thereby of his Divine Essence and Power,  
to which all things are present. And there-  
fore, as he elsewhere saith, *Before Abraham  
was I am,* John 8. 58. So here *I am with  
you* at all times to the *end of the World*, as  
really as at this present.

And then it follows, *I am μεθ' ὑμῶν*, with  
you my Apostles. For that these Words  
were spoken, and this Promise made only  
to the Apostles, is plain, from that the  
Eleven only are said to be present at this  
time, Ver. 16. And that besides this Pro-  
mise is made only to those who now re-  
ceived Commission to go and convert all  
Nations to the Christian Faith, to baptize  
and teach Mankind the Commands of  
Christ; which Commission being granted  
only to the Apostles, this Promise also, an-  
nexed to it, must needs belong to them  
only. But then we must observe likewise,  
that as it belongs to them only, so it be-  
longs to them all alike. *I am with you*, saith  
he, not with *Peter* only, or any one or  
more of you, but with you all equally, one  
as well as another. Yea, saith he, *I am  
with you, πάσας τὰς ἡμέρας*, every day,  
B 4 where.

Vol. I. wherefoever you are, whensoever you do any thing towards the executing the Commission which I have now given you, I am with you in the doing of it. And that too, *ἕως τῆς συντελείας τοῦ αἰῶνος*, to the very end of the World; that is, so long as I have a Church upon Earth, which shall be till my coming again to judge the World: all this while I promise to be with you, and therefore as long as the World shall last.

The Words being thus explained apart, that we may rightly apprehend our Lord's Meaning in the whole, there are two things to be considered: *First*, in what Sense the Apostles were to continue to the end of the World. *Secondly*, in what Sense our Saviour here promises to be with them all that while.

As for the *First*, it is plain, that our Saviour here supposeth that Apostles were to continue upon Earth to the end of the World, for otherwise it would be impossible for him to be with them so long, and by consequence to perform this Promise to them. But it is as plain likewise, that the Persons to whom our Saviour speaks these Words, were not to be here so long, being all long ago dead. And therefore I do not see how we can possibly understand the Words in any other Sense than this, even that our Lord spake them to his Apostles,  
not

not as private Persons, as *Peter, James, or John, &c.* but as Apostles, as Persons now placed by him in an Office, that should always continue in his Church. So that the Promise is made not so much to the Persons of the Apostles, as to the Office Apostolical; or at least to their Persons only as vested with that Office, and by Consequence to all Persons, to the end of the World, that should ever have that Office conferred upon them.

For our better understanding of this, we must consider what it is properly to be an Apostle of Christ, or wherein the Office purely Apostolical, consisted. For which we must know, that those which the Scriptures, and we from them, call *Apostles*, had many extraordinary Privileges granted to them, which were not Essential to their Office, nor peculiar to them as Apostles, but common to them with other Disciples, and therefore were to die with them. As for Example, were they called immediately by Christ himself? So were the Seventy, who were the Ear and Eye Witnesses of what Christ taught and did: So were many others as well as they. Were they Divinely inspired to speak all manner of Languages? to foretel things to come? to work Miracles to confirm their Doctrine? So were they which were no Apostles, as well

*Apostolical Office, what?*

Vol. I. well as they that were. And therefore  
 ~~~~~ such things as these, cannot be look'd up-  
 on as any part of the Apostolical Office,  
 but only as extraordinary Favours and Privi-  
 leges vouchsafed to the Persons of the Apo-  
 stles.

But the Office, properly Apostolical, con-  
 sisted only in such things as had an imme-  
 diate Reference, to the propagating, edify-  
 ing, and governing of the Church in all  
 Ages. Indeed, our Saviour himself gives  
 the Apostles a particular Description of their  
 Office, in the very Commission he here  
 grants them for the Execution of it; Com-  
 manding them to convert all Nations to  
 his Religion, to administer the Sacraments  
 to them, and to teach them all things that  
 he had command them. Under which is  
 contained whatsoever is necessary to the In-  
 struction and Government of his Church  
 in all Ages; as the Ordaining Persons to do  
 it, censuring those who refuse Instruction,  
 comforting and encouraging those who re-  
 ceive it, and the like. This was properly  
 the Office Apostolical, which therefore was  
 not to die with the Persons of the Apo-  
 stles, but was to be transmitted by them  
 to all after Ages, as our Lord himself in-  
 timates in the very Description of it. For  
 he here bids his Apostles go and make all  
 Nations his Disciples: which it is plain, the  
 Persons

*with his Ministers.*

Persons he spake these Words to, neither Serm. I. did, nor ever could accomplish, being to continue, as we know they did, but a little while upon Earth, wherein it was impossible for them to go over all Nations, much more to persuade them all to embrace the Christian Faith. And therefore this Command it self, as well as the Promise, must needs be so understood, as to be given not only to the Persons of the Apostles then present, but to all that should succeed them in that Office to the end of the World. So that from this very Command, we reasonably conclude, that these Words were meant not only of the Apostles themselves, but of their Successors in that Office all along, until all Nations have received the Gospel of Christ. Much more if we consider the Promise annexed to it, *And lo, I am with you alway, even to the end of the World*, which cannot possibly be fulfilled, unless there be Apostles, or Persons vested with the Apostolical Office, alway unto the end of the World.

Hence therefore it was, that the Apostles, having received this Command and Promise from our Lord, and understanding from thence that it was his Pleasure that they should transfer their Office to all future Ages, by ordaining others into it, took care to do it. For besides the Eleven, to whom



Vol. I. whom these Words were spoken, we find *Matthias, Paul and Barnabas* admitted into the same Office, and expressly call'd Apostles as well as they. So is *Epaphroditus*, Bishop of *Philippi*, called by St. *Paul* himself, *Phil. 2. 25*. And if we consult the antient Records of the Church, we shall there find, that *James* Bishop of *Hierusalem*, *Mark* of *Alexandria*, *Timothy* of *Ephesus*, *Titus* of *Crete*, and *Clemens* of *Rome*, were all called Apostles. And as *Theodoret* observes τὰς νῦν καλεμένους Ἐπισκόπους, Ἀποστόλους ὀνομαζόν, those which we now call Bishops the Primitive Christians called Apostles. And so indeed may all Bishops, rightly ordained, be called, as having the same Office in the Church which the Apostles had. And therefore the Office which *Matthias* was chosen into, is called Ἐπισκοπή, the Office of a Bishop, *Acts 1. 20*. Hence St. *Cyprian* sometimes calls Bishops by the name of Apostles, sometimes Apostles by the name of Bishops. And the reason is, because Bishops, as St. *Hierom* expresses it, *Apostolorum locum tenent*, they supply the place of the Apostles. Hence also, not only St. *Cyprian*, but *Irenaus* and *Tertullian*, assert Bishops to be the Apostles Successors, and reckon up the Succession of several of them from the Apostles themselves. And St. *Hierom* himself, having affirmed all Bishops of what-

Bishops antiently called Apostles.

whatsoever City, great or small, to be *Serm. I.*  
*ejusdem meriti, ejusdem & sacerdotii*, he  
 adds, *caterum omnes Apostolorum successores*  
*sunt*, they are all Successors to the Apo-  
 stles.

And therefore whatsoever our Lord said  
 to the Apostles, as such, all succeeding A-  
 postles or Bishops are obliged by it, as well  
 as they: As St. Cyprian observed long ago,  
 saying, *Christus qui dicit ad Apostolos, ac per*  
*hoc ad omnes praepositos, qui Apostolis vicariâ*  
*ordinatione succedunt*. For the Office is the  
 same now as it was then. So that in the  
 Apostles Days, and in all after Ages, and  
 in all places of the World, as the same Fa-  
 ther words it, *Episcopatus unus est, cujus à*  
*singulis in solidum pars tenetur*. There is  
 but one Episcopacy, but one Episcopal Of-  
 fice, a part whereof is wholly possessed by  
 every Bishop. Which, as it quite over-  
 throws the supremacy which the Bishop  
 of Rome pretends to over all other Bishops,  
 so it sufficiently proves the true Sense and  
 Meaning of the Words in my Text. For  
 seeing the Office is still one and the same  
 now which it was in the Apostles days, and  
 so will continue to the end of the World;  
 so that seeing there always will be such A-  
 postles in the Church, our Saviour Speak-  
 ing to the Eleven as Apostles, might well  
 say, *Lo, I am with you to the end of the World.*  
 Having

*One Episco-  
 pacy in the  
 Church of  
 Christ.*

Vol. I.  
 Christ Present with his Apostles to the end of the World, by his Spirit assisting them in the Execution of their Office.

Having thus discovered in what Sense the Apostles were to continue in the Church to the end of the World ; we are now to consider in what Sense our Lord here promises to be always with them. To find out which, we need not have recourse to the wild and extravagant Opinion of the *Ubiquitaria ns*, asserting the humane Nature of Christ to be every where present. Neither is it sufficient to observe that his Divine Essence is present with them. For so it is with every Creature, no Creature being able to subsist without it : Whereas our Saviour here promiseth to be with his Apostles in some such peculiar Sense, as can belong only to them, and to them only as his Apostles. And that we might not be mistaken in a matter of such Consequence as this, he himself hath elsewhere explain'd himself, and left upon Record how these Words are to be understood. For, as he here promises his Apostles that he will be with them to the end of the World ; so he elsewhere tells them, that his holy Spirit shall be always with them. *And I will pray the Father, saith he, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever, even the Spirit of Truth, John 14. 16.* which is the same in effect with his own being always with them. For the Spirit proceeding from the Son, as well as from the Father,

Father, and being of the same Nature and **Serm. I.**  
Essence with him, *Wheresoever the Spirit is,*  
*there is Christ also.* So that in short, our  
Saviour here promiseth his Apostles, that he  
will be always with them to the end of  
the World, by his holy Spirit, accompany-  
ing and assisting of them in the Discharge  
of their Apostolical Office. In the Discharge,  
I say, of their Apostolical Office. For we  
are still to remember what I observed be-  
fore, even that these Words were spoken to  
the Apostles and their Successors, only as  
such: And therefore Christ's Presence with  
them by his holy Spirit here promised, can-  
not be understood only of his illumina-  
ting, or sanctifying, or comforting Presence,  
which he vouchsafeth to all Believers as well  
as unto them; but it must be under-  
stood in such a Sense as is proper to the  
Apostles, Pastors and Governours of the  
Church in all Ages: which in brief, amounts  
to no more nor less than this, even that  
Christ having constituted such an Office  
in his Church, for the Government and  
Edification of it to the end of the World;  
He here promiseth that he himself, by his  
holy Spirit, will be always present at the  
Execution of it, so as to make it effectual  
to the great Ends and Purposes for which it  
was designed.

To

Vol. I.



To explain this more fully to you, it will be necessary to instance in the several parts of the Apostolical Office, and to shew how Christ according to his Promise, is always present by his Spirit at the Performance of them. Now the *First* and principal part of this Office, is the Ordaining others; into it, and giving them Power to ordain others, and so successively to the end of the World; which is necessarily supposed in the Promise it self, as that without which it could never be fulfilled.

*Ordination  
of Mini-  
sters, Apo-  
stolical.*

The *First* therefore that were ordained into this Office, were ordained by Christ himself. The form and manner of which Ordination is set down, *John 20. 21, 22.* where it is said that Christ, coming to his Apostles, said to them, *Peace be with you, as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you. And when he had said this, he breathed, on them and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost:* Where we may plainly see how our Saviour would be with his Apostles, after his Body was removed from them, even by his holy Spirit, which he therefore breaths from himself into them, by that means consecrating them his Apostles and Vicegerents upon Earth. Telling them withal, that as *the Father sent him, so he sent them.* Whereby he certifies them, that whatsoever Power he had received from the Father, for the Instruction and

and Government of his Church, he now left the same with them, or rather with the holy Spirit which he breathed into them. And by consequence, that as he sent them, so were they to send others, by conferring the Spirit upon them, and so from one to another all along, that the Spirit which they now received, might continue with them and their Successors, and so supply his place upon Earth, until his coming again.

Hence the Apostles, being thus ordained and instructed by our Lord, took special Care to transfer the same Spirit to others, which they had received from him. But this they could not do after the same manner as Christ had done it to them, even by breathing upon them. For that way was peculiar to Christ, from whom the Spirit proceedeth. Wherefore they, being doubtless directed thereto by the same Spirit, transmitted it to others by laying their Hands upon them; which was the old way which had been used in the Church before. For so *Moses* communicated the Spirit of Wisdom to *Joshua*, thereby constituting him his Successor in the Government of *Israel*, even by laying his Hands upon him, *Dent.* 34. 9. Thus *Paul* and *Barnabas* were ordained by the special appointment of the Holy Ghost himself, *Acts* 13. 3. For it is

Serm. I.  
  
*Imposition  
of Hands,  
Primitive.*

C

said,

Serm. I. said, That they having *fasted* and *prayed*,  
 laid their Hands upon them, and so sent  
 them out: Who thereupon are said in the  
 next Verse to be sent by the Holy Ghost;  
 it being now conferred upon them by  
 the Imposition of Hands. Thus St. Paul  
 communicated, *χάρισμα τῷ ἁγίῳ*, as he  
 calls it, the Gift of the Spirit unto *Ti-*  
*mothy*, 2 *Tim.* 1. 6. And wheresoever we  
 read that the Apostles ordained any, they  
 still did it after this manner, even by lay-  
 ing their Hands upon them: and that too,  
 whether they ordained them into their  
 whole Office, or else into any part of  
 it. For the whole Care of the Church  
 being committed unto them, they had  
 Power to constitute what Officers they  
 thought fit under them. But still they did  
 it by laying their Hands upon them, and  
 so communicating of the same Spirit unto  
 them, which they had received from Christ.

Used in the  
 Ordaining  
 of Deacons.

As when they found it necessary to have  
*Deacons* in the Church, to take Care of  
 the Widows, they ordained them, by lay-  
 ing their Hands upon them, *Acts* 6. 6.  
 thereby transferring so much of the Spirit  
 upon them, as was necessary for that Of-  
 fice. And when they afterwards saw it  
 very necessary that there should be other  
 Officers in the Church, which we now call  
*Presbyters*, that should have Power under  
 them

And of  
 Presbyters  
 or Priests.

them to preach the Gospel, and administer the Sacraments in places where they themselves could not be always present; upon these also they laid their Hands, and by that means communicated so much of the Spirit unto them, as was necessary for the due and effectual Execution of the said Office.

Thus therefore it is, that the Apostolical Office hath been handed down from one to another ever since the Apostles days to our time, and so will be to the end of the World, Christ himself being continually present at such Imposition of Hands, thereby transferring the same Spirit, which he had first breathed into his Apostles, upon others successively after them, as really as he was present with the Apostles themselves, when he first breathed it into them. Insomuch, that they who are thus ordained, are said to be made Bishops by the Holy Ghost himself, as well as the Apostles were, *Acts* 20. ver. 28. By which means the Holy Catholick Church always hath been, and still is truly Apostolical, as it is called in the *Nicene Creed*. And the several parts of the Apostolical Office are now as effectually performed by their Successors and others ordained under them, as they were while the Apostles themselves lived. For it was not the Persons of the

*Whence the Church is Stiled Apostolical to this day.*



Vol. I. Apostles, but their Office, influenced and assisted by the Spirit of God, that made the Sacraments they administered to be valid, and their Preaching of the Gospel so prevalent upon those that heard it. Though Paul himself planted, and Apollos watered, it was God only that gave the Increase.

*The Efficacy of Holy Administration depends upon the Spirit of God accompanying his Institution.*

And so it is to this Day. All the Efficacy that there is or can be in the Administration of any Ecclesiastical Office, depends altogether upon the Spirit of God, going along with the Office, and assisting at the Execution of it. Without which, the Sacraments we administer would be but empty Signs, and our preaching no more than beating of the Air. Whereas on the other side, Christ, according to his Promise, being always present by his holy Spirit, at the Administration of the several Offices which he has ordained in his Church, they can never fail of their designed Effect, if the Persons to whom they are administered, be but rightly disposed and qualified for it. By this means they that are duly baptized, are *born again, not only of Water, but of the Spirit also*, John 3. 5. and so together with the *washing of Regeneration*, they have the *renewing of the Holy Ghost*, Tit. 3. 5. Hence also in the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, the worthy Receiver does really by Faith partake of the Mystical

cal Body and Blood of Christ, and of such Influences of the holy Spirit as shall enable him to walk as becomes a Member of Christ. And whensoever we read, preach, or publish the Gospel as Christ taught it, the holy Spirit goes along with it, so that it becomes the Power of God unto Salvation, to every one that believeth. And seeing our Lord thus continually accompanies the Apostles and their Successors, so as to vouchsafe his Spirit to those on whom they lay their Hands, and to co-operate by the same Spirit with those who are so ordained by them, in their Administration of the Word and Sacraments. Hence, he may well be said to be always with them, according to the Promise he makes them in my Text.

But besides that Imposition of Hands, whereby the Apostles transmitted the Spirit they had received, together with their Apostolical Office, down to succeeding Ages, we find them sometimes laying their Hands on Believers baptized, that thereby the Holy Ghost might come upon them, not with respect to any Office, but only to confirm and strengthen them in the Christian Faith.

For when the *Samaritans* had received the Word of God, and were baptized by *Philip*, who was no Apostle, but only a Deacon,

*Imposition  
of Hands  
used at Con-  
firmation.*

Vol. I. Deacon, the Apostles at *Hierusalem* hearing of it, sent *Peter* and *John* unto them, who having laid their Hands upon them, they received the Holy Ghost, *Acts* 8. 17. *Philip* indeed having had the Apostles Hands laid upon him, had thereby received Power to baptize them with Water and the Holy Ghost: But it seems he had no Power to lay his Hands upon them, and by that means to confer any greater measure of the Spirit upon them. No, that was to be done only by the Apostles themselves; who therefore sent two of their own Body, as far as from *Hierusalem* to *Samaria*, on purpose to do it, which certainly they would never have done, had this been an useless Ceremony, or if *Philip* or any one under an Apostle could have done it. So that this Instance, is of itself, sufficient to prove that this was an Act peculiar to the Apostolical Office. And that our Saviour, according to his Promise, was really present at the performance of it; seeing the Apostles had no sooner laid their Hands upon them, but they immediately received the Holy Ghost. Another Instance of the same Nature we find, *Acts* 19. 6. where *St. Paul* being at *Ephesus*, and finding some Disciples there, baptized only with the Baptism of *John*, he laid his Hands upon them, and so they received the Holy Ghost.

Hence

Hence, the Catholick Church in all Ages, hath not only retained this Apostolical Rite, which we now call *Confirmation*, but hath always esteemed it an essential part of the Apostolical Office, and therefore to be performed by none but the Apostles themselves and their Successors, to the end of the World. And therefore it was the ancient and constant Custom of the Primitive Church, as it is ours, for the Bishop of every Diocese to go into the lesser Cities and Villages belonging to him, and there lay his Hands upon those who were baptized by Priests or Deacons, that they might receive the Holy Ghost. as we learn from St. *Hierom* himself, whose words are, *Nō abnuo hanc esse Ecclesiarum consuetudinem, ut ad eos qui minoribus urbibus per Presbyteros & Diaconos baptizati sunt, Episcopus ad invocationem sancti Spiritus manum impositurus excurrat.*

Serm. I.

Confirmation,  
an Apostolical,

And therefore how any Bishops in our Days, dare neglect so considerable a part of their Office, I know not, but fear they will have no good Account to give of it, when they come to stand before our Lord's Tribunal. And as for others who, contrary to the Practice of the Primitive Christians, either refuse or neglect Confirmation, when they may have it administered to them, they have just Cause to suspect that they

Bishops accountable  
for not Confirming.

Vol. I. have no good Sense of Religion, nor Regard for the Gifts and Graces of the Holy Spirit; for if they had, they would use all means for the attainment thereof; especially this, which hath been found effectual for that end by the Catholick and Apostolick Church in all Ages, where Persons have been duly prepared for it. Our Lord being according to his Promise in my Text, always present at the performance of this, as well as of any other part of the Apostolical Office.

*The People answerable for neglecting Confirmation.*

*Govern-ment of the Church, by Bishops Apostolical.*

There is one thing still behind, which we must by no means omit, especially upon this Occasion: And that is the Power of governing the Church, which our Lord left with his Apostles and their Successors, to the end of the World; but so that he, according to his Promise is always present with them at the Execution of it. For this Power is granted to them in the very Charter to which this Promise is annexed. For here our Lord gives them Commission not only to baptize, but likewise to teach those who are his Disciples, to observe whatsoever he had commanded. Whereby they are empowered both to declare what are those Commands of Christ which Men ought to observe, and also to use all Means to prevail upon Men to observe them. Such as are, correcting and punishing those who violate

violate, rewarding and encouraging those which keep them. But our Saviour's Kingdom being, as himself saith, not of this World, but purely Spiritual, he hath authorized his Substitutes in the Government of it, to use Rewards and Punishments of the same Nature; even to admonish Delinquents in his Name to forsake their Sins, and if they continue Obstinate, and neglect such Admonitions, to excommunicate, or cast them out of his Church; and, upon their Repentance, to absolve and receive them in again. This Power our Saviour first promised to St. Peter, and in him to the rest of the Apostles, *Matth. 16. 19.* But it was not actually conferred upon them. till after his Resurrection, when having breathed, he said unto them, *Receive ye the Holy Ghost: Whosoever Sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them, and whosoever Sins ye retain, they are retained,* John 20. 23. As if he should have said, I, the Son of Man, having Power upon Earth also to forgive Sins, do now commit the same to you; so that whose Sins soever are remitted or retained by you, are so by me also. From whence it is plain, both that the Apostles received Power to remit and retain Sins; and that Christ himself concurs with them in the Exercise of that Power, and how he doth it, even by his holy Spirit now breathed into them.

To

Vol. I.

*Government of the Church by Bishops, Ministerial.*

To explain the full Extent and Latitude of this Power, would require more time than can be allowed upon this Day, whereon 'tis to be exercis'd: and therefore I shall observe only two things concerning it, whereof the *First* is, that how great soever the Power be, which our Lord committed to his Apostles, and their Successors, for the Government of his Church in all Ages, it is but Ministerial; they act only under him, as his Ministers and Stewards, and must one day give an Account to him of all their Actions. Yea, whatsoever Power they have of this Nature, it is still his Power in their Hands; they derive it continually from him, who is always present with them. And therefore, as they themselves need to have a care how they exert this Power, or neglect the exerting of it; so others had need to take care too, that they neither resist nor despise it.

*Bishops Visitations, Apostolical.*

The other Thing I would observe unto you, is, that for the better Execution of this Power, it hath been the constant Custom of the Apostles, and their Successors in all Ages, to visit the Churches committed to their Charge; to enquire into the Faith and Manners, both of the Clergy and Laity that are under them; and to use so much of their Authority, and give such Orders as they found necessary for the due Observation

tion of their Lord's Commands: Thus we Serm. I. find the Apostles frequently visiting the Churches they had planted; and St. Paul particularly keeping a solemn Visitation at *Miletus*, where he sent for the Elders of *Ephesus* and of all *Asia*, (as *Ireneus* affirms, and the Context it self proves) and summoned them to appear before him there, where he gave them many Apostolical Admonitions and Directions how to feed the Flock over which the Holy Ghost had made them Overseers, *Acts* 20. 28. Afterwards, we find it recorded in Ecclesiastical History, that St. *John* often visited the *Asiatick* Churches, as his peculiar Province. And I do not question, but where we read of *Pinytus* Bishop of *Gnossus*, and *Dionysius* of *Alexandria*, laying their Commands upon their Clergy, in the first Ages of the Church, it was at such a Visitation as this. And we cannot doubt of St. *Cyprian's* Care in this Particular, so long as he resided upon his Bishoprick, seeing that in his very Recess, when he was forced to retire, he visited them, as himself saith, by his Letters, sending severall both to the Clergy and Laity, still extant in his Works, wherein he sometimes reproveth, sometimes admonishes and directs them how to carry and behave themselves in that Juncture.

Indeed,



Vol. I.  
 Bishops  
 bound in  
 Duty and  
 in Interest  
 to Visit.

Indeed, this is so necessary to the discharging of the Episcopal or Apostolical Office, that it cannot be imagined, that ever any conscientious Bishop durst neglect it. Infomuch, that for several Ages after the Apostles, we have no Ecclesiastical Law or Canon, as I remember, about Episcopal Visitations, because there was no need of them till about the sixth or seventh Century, when there were several Canons made concerning the time and manner of keeping them. As the sixth Council at *Arles* decreed, that every Bishop should go about his Diocese once every Year. *Ivo* quotes an ancient Canon of the second Council at *Sevil*, that every Bishop shall once a Year go about his Diocese, and confirm and teach the People. The second Council at *Braga* in *Portugal* decreed, that Bishops in their Visitations should instruct their Clergy how to administer the Sacrament. The fourth at *Toledo*, that they shall then enquire into the Fabrick of their several Churches, and examine what Repairs they wanted. Another at *Augusta Vindelicorum*, or *Ausburg* as some think, as others at *Ratisbone* in *Germany*, decreed, that when the Bishop goes about his Diocese to confirm the People, the Presbyters shall be always ready to attend him. There are several other Canons, enjoyning Bishops to  
 visit

visit at least once a Year, and directing them what to do at their Visitations, but none that I know of that they shall visit in general. The Church taking it for granted all along, that no Bishop would totally omit so necessary a part of his Duty, but would some time, and after some manner or other, visit the Diocese that belonged to him; which certainly none can chuse but do, who considers either the Account he must one day give, of his Stewardship, or the Encouragement our Lord himself has given him to do it, in that he hath promis'd to be always with him in the Discharge of his Office, saying to his Apostles and their Successors for ever, *Lo, I am with you alway, even to the end of the World.*

Serm. I.

Now the Promises being duly weighed, even that our Lord himself is always present by his holy Spirit with his Apostles and their Successors in the Execution of the Apostolical Office. Many useful Inferences might be thence deduced. I shall instance in some few, which I hope will not be altogether unworthy of your Consideration at this time.

Hence therefore, in the *First* place, I observe, how much we are all bound to acknowledge the Goodness, to praise, magnify, and adore the Name of the most high God, in that we were born and bred, and still

*The Church of England, an Apostolical Church, for which the Members ought to be thankful to God.*

still live in a Church wherein the Apostolical Line hath, through all Ages, been preserved entire, there having been a constant Succession of such Bishops in it, as were truly and properly Successors to the Apostles, by virtue of that Apostolical Imposition of Hands; which being begun by the Apostles, hath been continued from one to another ever since their time down to ours. By which means, the same Spirit, which was breathed by our Lord into his Apostles, is, together with their Office, transmitted to their lawful Successors, the Pastors and Governours of our Church at this time, and acts, moves, and assists at the Administration of the several parts of the Apostolical Office in our Days, as much as ever. From whence it follows, that the means of Grace, which we now enjoy, are in themselves as powerful and effectual as they were in the Apostles Days: And if they prove not always so Successful now as they were then, that cannot be imputed to any want of Efficacy in them, but to some Defect or other in those which use them. For they who are duly prepared, cannot but always find the same Effect from them, because there is always the same Cause, even the Spirit of God moving upon his Word and Sacraments, when administred by our Church, as well as when administred by the

the Apostles, to whom it was first given.

Serm. I.

And here it may not be amiss to observe, what I have often thought of, not without Admiration, how strangely the Spirit of the Apostles hath run through our Church, all along, ever since the Reformation, diffusing it self from the Head, which first received it, into all her real Members, as may easily be seen, not only in the Discipline of our Church, but likewise in its Doctrine, manner of Worship, Patience under Sufferings, universal Charity, and particularly in its Loyalty and Submission to the Civil Magistrate; which the Apostles, assisted by the Spirit of God, did not only press upon others, but practised themselves. And the same Spirit hath enabled our Church constantly to do the same. Insomuch, that Malice it self could never fasten any thing of Rebellion upon our Church, as now constituted, nor upon any of her Members that lived faithfully in her Communion. Many of them have suffer'd Imprisonment, Sequestration, yea Martyrdom it self, as the Apostles did; and yet all have been as free from Rebellion and Treason as they were; which to me is a great Instance of the same Spirit still working in our Church, which wrought so effectually upon them.

*Perpetually  
Loyal.*

And

Vol. I.

*The Devil  
an Enemy  
to it, and  
why.*

And this I verily believe is the great Reason, why the Devil hath such a Spite at our Church, still stirring up Adversaries of all sorts against it; Papists on the one Hand, and Sectaries on the other, and all, if possible, to destroy it; even because the Spirit, which is ministred in it, is so contrary to his Nature, and so destructive of his Kingdom, that he can never expect to domineer and tyrannize over the People of the Land, so long as such a Church is settled among them, and they continue firm to it. And therefore seeing he cannot, by all his secret Plots and Contrivances, totally overthrow it, he still uses the utmost of his Skill and Power to draw as many as he can from its Communion, and so make them Schismatics, that so being separated from the Body, they may not partake of the Spirit that is in it, nor by Consequence receive any Benefit from this Promise of our Blessed Saviour to the Governours of his Catholick and Apostolick Church in all Ages, *Lo, I am with you alway, to the end of the World.*

*Clergy  
thereof not  
to do their  
Lord's work  
negligently.*

The next thing I would observe unto you from what we have now discoursed of, concerns us of the Clergy, who are entrusted with any part of the Apostolical Office. For being ordained by those who succeeded the Apostles in a direct Line,  
by

by the Imposition of their Hands upon us, we received not only Power to administer the Word and Sacraments, but likewise the Spirit of Christ to accompany and influence such Administrations: By whom therefore, Christ himself is always present with us, whensoever we are employ'd in the Work that he hath set us. Which Consideration, methinks, should strike an Awe and Terror into us, and make us dread the Thoughts of doing the Work of our Lord negligently. And therefore whether we Minister unto him in the publick *Liturgy* of our Church, Read or Preach his Holy Word, or Administer his Blessed Sacraments, let us be all perswaded to have an especial Care that we do it, not after a careless or perfunctory Manner, but with all that Reverence and Godly Fear, with that Earnestness and Devotion, with that Seriousness and Intention of Mind, as becomes those who believe that our Lord himself is always present with us, not only to take notice of what we do, but to Bless and Sanctifie it to the Salvation of Mens immortal Souls.

Hence also it concerns us all, to carry and behave our selves at all times to the utmost of our Power, as becometh the Ministers of Christ: to whom the Eternal Son of God hath vouchsafed so high an  
D Honour,

*To be blameless in their Conversations.*

Vol. I.



Honour, as not only to employ us in his own immediate Service, but likewise to reside himself continually with us. And therefore, seeing he is pleased to Honour us with his own Presence, let us endeavour to Honour him too, by walking in Holiness and Righteousness before him all the Days of our Life. Especially, let us take all the Care we can to avoid whatsoever is offensive to him, or unworthy of that high and heavenly Calling in which he hath plac'd us. It is true, the Efficacy of the Word and Sacraments, is not impeded by the Wickedness or Unworthiness of him, by whom they are Administred, as our Church hath rightly determined; because that depends not upon the Person, but the Office and Christ's Promise to it. But howsoever, it behoves us, who attend continually upon him, to walk in all the Commandments of the Lord blameless, lest otherwise we bring a Scandal upon our Profession, and give too much occasion to the Enemies of our Lord to Blaspheme his most Sacred Name. Especially, considering what a sad and dismal thing it would be, if we, who are employ'd by Christ to perswade others to obey his Gospel, should not obey it our selves, and so not save our selves as well as those that hear us: but be Instruments in God's Hand to bring others to Heaven,

Heaven and yet we our selves be cast down to Hell. Which is not only possible, but impossible to be avoided, unless we look very narrowly to our selves: I am sure St. Paul thought so, and therefore saith, *I keep under my Body, and bring it into subjection, lest that by any means when I have Preach'd to others, I myself should be a castaway,* 1 Cor. 9. 27. And if so great an Apostle was forc'd to take so much pains with himself, lest when he had Preach'd Salvation unto others, he himself should not attain it, what Cause have you and I to do so? But our Comfort is, that our Lord is always present with us, and therefore we can never want Assistance from him, if we be not first wanting to our selves.

Hoping therefore, that this Consideration of Christ's Promise to us, will have its desired effect upon us of the Clergy; I shall in the next place shew what use others also may, and ought to make of it. And for that end, shall apply my self unto you all. Seeing therefore that our Lord hath Promised to be with his Apostles and their Successors to the end of the World: Seeing the Succession of the Office Apostolical, hath without interruption been continued in our Church to this Day. And seeing therefore that Christ according to his Promise, is alway present by his Holy Spirit

*Directions for the Laity in the Church of England to consider Christ present in all their Administrations.*



Vol. I.

at the Word and Sacraments, as Admini-  
 ftered by our Church, to quicken, a<sup>c</sup>tuate,  
 and make them effectual to the Salvation  
 of our Souls; hence in his Name, and for  
 his Sake, and your own too, I humbly  
 pray and beseech you all, that you would  
 take all the opportunities you can, to meet  
 your Lord and Saviour in the publick Of-  
 fices of the Church, to which he hath thus  
 promised his peculiar Presence. And think  
 it not enough to be there, but consider all  
 the while in whose Presence you are, and  
 deport your selves accordingly. And while  
 we Read or Preach the Gospel, call upon  
 you, exhort and pray you to observe what-  
 soever Christ hath commanded, still re-  
 member the Apostles Words, that *we are*  
*Ambassadors for Christ, as tho' God did be-*  
*seech you by us, we pray you in Christ's stead,*  
*be ye reconciled to God, 2 Cor. 5. 20.* And  
 therefore receive it not as the Word of  
 Man, but, as it is indeed, the Word of  
 God himself.

*Not to have  
 Men's Per-  
 sons in ad-  
 miration.*

Above all things, take heed, that you  
 have not Mens Persons in admiration, so  
 as to think the Word and Sacraments one  
 jot the better or worse, because Admini-  
 ftered by one Person rather than another.  
 For they that do so, it is evident, that  
 they regard the Person more than the Office,  
 and then it is no wonder if they receive no  
 bene-

benefit or advantage from it. For all the hopes and expectations that we have or can have, from the exercise of any Ecclesiastical Office, by whomsoever perform'd, are grounded only upon Christ's Promise to the Office it self, to be present with it by his Holy Spirit; without which, all the fine Words and Phrases in the World, can never mortifie one Lust, nor convert one Soul to God and Goodness. And therefore ye, whensoever you address your selves to the publick Prayers of our Church, to hear God's Word Read, or Preach'd, or to receive the Holy Sacrament, still keep the Eye of your Faith fix'd upon Christ, as there really present, according to his Promise, ready to dispense his Heavenly Blessings, by his Holy Spirit, working together with the Ordinance, to make it accomplish the end of its Institution, even your Sanctification in this World, and your Eternal Salvation in the World to come. Do but observe these few Rules, in all your solemn Devotions as perform'd by that part of the Catholick Church, which by the Blessing of Almighty God is settled amongst you, and then I dare assure you in the Name of my Lord and Master Jesus Christ, that you will all experience the Truth of what you have now heard, even that Christ is always present with his Apostles in the

Serm. I.

For the efficacy of Administrations depends not upon the Person but Office.

Vol. I. discharge of their Office to the end of the  
 World.

*Not to fr-  
 sake the  
 Communi-  
 on of the  
 Church.*

Moreover, from the Premises duly weighed, you may all very easily observe, what reason you all have, to continue stedfast in the Communion of our Church, wherein the Word and Sacraments are so powerfully and effectually Administred, and not to deviate from her, either into Popery on the one hand, or Schism on the other. For, as for Popery, altho' we do not deny but that the Apostolical Succession hath been continued in the Church of *Rome*, yet we cannot but affirm also, that they have made very bad use of it, or rather have most egregiously abused it, having clogged the several Offices with so many Superstitious Ceremonies, that they quench the Spirit which should enflame, and quicken them, or else perform them so imperfectly and irregularly, that they are not the same that were instituted by Christ, and so not capable of having this Promise fulfilled to them. I shall instance only in two, the Reading of the Scriptures, and the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper.

*Neither for  
 Popery.*

As for the first, The publick and solemn Reading of the Word of God, by a Minister of Christ, lawfully ordain'd and appointed thereunto, I look upon it as a thing  
 of

of much greater consequence, than it is commonly thought to be: Yea, I cannot but reckon it amongst the most useful and prevalent means of Grace that we do or can enjoy. For altho' it be our Duty to read the Scriptures in Private, which I hope you all do, yet none of you but may find by experience, that a Chapter once read in Publick, as before describ'd, is of greater force, and makes deeper impressions upon you, than if you run it ten times over by your selves. And the reason is, because the same Spirit, which indited the Scriptures, accompanies such solemn Reading of them, and sets it home upon the Hearts and Consciences of them that hear it. So that besides the Majesty and Authority that appears in the Scriptures themselves, as they are the very Word of God, much more than any Exposition of them can be, there is likewise at such a time the Power and Efficacy of the Spirit of Christ then present, to press and enforce it upon the Minds of all such as duly attend to the Reading of them. But now in the Church of *Rome* all this is lost. For altho' they read the Scriptures indeed, yet they read them as they do their Prayers, in an unknown Tongue, at least to the greatest part of the Congregation, and commonly to the very Reader himself, By which

Vol. I.



means the People are depriv'd, not only of the Scriptures themselves, but likewise of the Assistance of God's Spirit, which otherwise would accompany the Reading of them. For as they order the Matter, the Spirit of God himself cannot make his own Word effectual to their Salvation without a Miracle. He must first give them the gift of Tongues and make them understand a Language they never learn'd, before it is possible for him to make his own Word of any use or advantage to them. For he never works upon our Minds, but in a way suitable to our Natures, as we are rational Creatures, so as first to clear up our Apprehensions of the Good he propounds to us, and so incline our Wills to the Embracement of it. But where the Word of God is propounded in an unknown Tongue, it is impossible for the People to have any Apprehensions of it at all, for the Spirit of God to work upon, and to clear up so as to influence the Will by them. By which means the Word of God it self is made of little or no effect to those who live in the Communion of that Church.

*Because the Word of God and the Sacrament is of no use at all to the People in that Persuasion.*

The same Reason holds good also, as to the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, as Administred by the *Romish Church*. For the whole Office belonging to it, is wrapt up

up in a Language the People do not understand, and therefore know not what the Priest saith, nor whether he Consecrates the Host or no; only they see him perform a great many Ceremonies as unintelligible as the Language he speaks. And at length he puts a Wafer into their Mouths. Now what is there in all this, that the Spirit of God can make use of to the Comfort and Edification of the People? Especially, considering that the Priest intends not to Minister the Spirit of Christ unto them, but only his real Body, as they are bound to believe the Wafer to be. But if it was possible, as it neither is, nor can be, to convert the Bread into the Body of Christ, and give it to the People, what good could that do them, if abstracted from the Spirit? For as our Lord himself saith, *It is the Spirit that quickeneth, the Flesh profiteth nothing*, John. 6. 63. But after all this, I do not see how the Promise of the Spirit can belong to the Sacrament, as they manage it. For the Promise is made not to any one part of it as distinct from the other, but to the whole, as it was instituted by Christ. And where the Institution is not rightly observed, neither can the Promise annexed to it, be perform'd. But it is plain, that our Saviour instituted the Cup as well as the Bread. And it is as plain, that the Church of *Rome* Administers the Bread only,  
and

**Vol. 1.** and not the Cup. And therefore they, by depriving the People of one half of the Communion, do thereby deprive them of the Comfort and Benefit of the whole.

And therefore were there no other, as there are many Arguments to deter sober and considering Men from the Communion of that Church, this, one would think, is of it self sufficient to do it; even because those great means of Grace, the Word and Sacrament it self are so Administred by it, as to be made of no use at all to the People.

*Nor for Schism.*

And as for Schism, they certainly hazard their Salvation at a strange rate; who separate themselves from such a Church as ours is, wherein the Apostolical Succession, the Root of all Christian Communion, hath been so entirely preserved, and the Word and Sacraments are so effectually Administred; and all to go into such Assemblies and Meetings as can have no pretence to the great Promise in my Text. For it is manifest, that this Promise was made only to the Apostles and their Successors to the end of the World. Whereas in the private Meetings, where their Teachers have no Apostolical or Episcopal Imposition of Hands, they have no ground to pretend to succeed the Apostles, nor by consequence any right to the Spirit which our Lord here promiseth; without which, altho' they Preach their Hearts out,


*Because Schismatics can have no pretence to the promise of God's Spirit assisting them.*

I do

do not see what Spiritual Advantage can accrue to their Hearers by it. And therefore whatsoever they may think of it, for my own part, I would not be without this Promise of our Saviour for all the World, as knowing, that not only my self, but the whole Catholick Church is highly concern'd in it; It being by virtue of this Promise, that the Church is continually acted, guided, and assisted by the the Spirit of God, and so the ordinary means of Grace are made effectual to Salvation, which otherwise would be of no force or efficacy at all. And therefore to speak modestly, they must needs run a very great hazard, that cut themselves off from ours, and by consequence from the Catholick Church, and so render themselves incapable of receiving any benefit from this Promise, or from the means of Grace which they do or may enjoy.

Upon these therefore, and such like considerations, which this Text will readily suggest to your serious and more retired Thoughts, I humbly advise and beseech you all in the Name of Christ your Saviour, and as you do tender your Salvation by him, that you would not hearken unto those, who go about to seduce you from our Church, but that you would continue firm and faithful to it. For so long as  
you



Vol. I.  you do so, I dare undertake for you, that you are in the ready way to Heaven. But if you once forsake that, whither you will next go, I know not; no nor you neither.

*But to live up to the Rules and Constitutions of it.*

But when I speak of your continuing firm and faithful to our Church, I do not mean that you should only talk high for her, much less inveigh against her Adversaries, or damn all those, who are not of her Communion; for this is contrary to the Divine and Apostolical Spirit that is in her, which is a Spirit of Meekness, and Soberness, and Charity. But my meaning is, that you firmly believe whatsoever she, from the Word of God propounds as an Article of Faith, and faithfully perform whatsoever she, from the same Word requires as a necessary Duty to God or Man, and by consequence so live in the Communion of our Church, as to live up to the Rules and Constitutions of it.

And oh! that all we, who are here present, and all that profess to be of our Church, wheresoever they are, would for the future do so! What an Holy, what an Happy People should we then be? How Pious towards God, how Loyal to our Sovereign, how Just and Charitable-towards all Men? This would be the way to convince our Adversaries of their Errors and Mistakes, when

when they see how far we excel them in Vertue and good Works. And this would be the way too, to secure our Church against all the attempts that Men or Devils can make upon her. For then our Lord himself would delight to dwell amongst us, and be always present with us, not only by his Spirit, but likewise by his Power too. And if he be with us, we need not fear what Flesh can do against us; so that we may lay it down as a most certain Truth, that our Church can never be destroyed but by it self. For if we do not first fail of performing our Duty unto him, be sure Christ will never fail of performing his Promise unto us. But how Proud, how Malicious soever our Adversaries are, and whatsoever Designs they may carry on against us, he that sitteth in the Heavens will laugh them to scorn, our Lord will have them in derision: He will abate their Pride, assuage their Malice, or else confound their Devices, so as to make them fall themselves into the same Pit that they dig for others. And notwithstanding all their endeavours to the contrary, he will settle our Church upon such Foundations, that the Gates of Hell it self shall never be able to prevail against it. Neither will he only continue his Church to us, but likewise his Spirit to  
our

Vol. I. our Church, so as always to perform this  
Promise in my Text, *Lo I am with you  
always, even unto the end of the World. Amen.*

*O Blessed Jesu, thou Eternal Son of God; to  
whom with the Father and the Holy Spi-  
rit, be everlasting Honour, Praise and  
Glory, from this Time forth and for ever-  
more.*

---

SER-

---



---

# S E R M O N II.

---

## The Institution of Ministers.

---

ACTS i. 26.

*And they gave forth their Lots,  
and the Lot fell upon Matthias.  
And he was numbered with the  
Eleven Apostles.*

**T**HIS Portion of Scripture appointed for the Epistle this Day, suits as well with the Work that is to be now done, as it doth with the Day for which it is appointed. It is appointed for the Feast of *St. Matthias*, whose Memory we this Day celebrate, of whom we here read, that he was taken into the number of Apostles, in the Church of Christ.

Vol. I.

Christ. And there are several Persons here present, to be ordained now into the sacred Ministry of the same Church, whereof he was ordained an Apostle. And therefore I shall not insist upon the Words themselves, but I shall take Occasion from hence to discourse of Ordination in general, under which, that of St. *Matthias* in particular will come in of Course.

*Ordination  
of Ministers  
what?*

Now by Ordination in general, I mean, the setting apart some certain Persons to direct, govern, assist, and influence others in the publick Worship of Almighty God, and to administer such Means unto them, as he hath appointed for their eternal Salvation. Concerning which, we shall consider two things, *First*, the Necessity of it, and then the Way and Manner of performing it.

*Necessity of  
Ministers*

As to the *First*, we need not say much, it being a thing that Mankind in general seems to be agreed in. For as there is no Nation in the World, but where they profess some kind of Religion or other, so there is no Religion professed in the World, but where they have some Persons or other set apart for the Celebration of the several Rites and Ceremonies in it, without which, indeed, it is impossible that any Religion should subsist. For if no places were set apart for the Worship of God, Men would soon worship him no where; if no Times, they

they would never worship him; so if no Persons were set apart for it, none would ever do it at all, at least, not so as they ought.

Serm. II.  
~~~~~


And if it be so in Natural, how much more in Revealed Religion, of which this seems to be one of the integral or essential Parts, without which, it is not that Religion which God hath revealed. For whenever he, the great Creator and Governour of the World hath revealed his Will and Pleasure to his Creatures, how he would have them worship and serve him that made them: He hath still at the same time constituted certain Officers amongst them, to assist them in it; which Officers being, as it were, his own Domesticks, or immediate Servants, or Ministers, waiting continually upon himself and his Service, he always hath reserved to himself the Constitution or Ordination of them; not suffering any one that had a mind to it, to meddle with any thing belonging to the said Offices, without his Leave and Order first obtained. And if any presume to do it, he doth not only make what they do void, and of no Effect, but he punisheth them severely for it: as we find by many Instances in holy Scripture.

*Danger of  
undertaking the  
Ministerial  
Office without a Com-  
mission.*

Hence the Apostle saith, *no Man taketh this Honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron, Heb. 5. 4.* That is,

E

no

Vol. I.  no Man can be really a Priest, a Minister of God, as *Aaron* was, but such as are called and constituted by God himself, as he was. And they that do undertake the said Ministry, without such a Call, whatsoever they may fantasie or pretend, they are not God's Ministers, and therefore all they do is in vain, and to no Purpose, as the Apostle saith elsewhere. *How shall they preach, except they be sent?* Rom. 10. 15. They may speak the same Words, deliver the same Truths, press the same Duties, as they do who are really God's Ministers; but this is not Preaching, properly so called; they do not publish and proclaim the Will of God, with any Power or Authority over their Hearers, for they have received none from God, as not being called and sent by him.

This the Apostles and first Disciples of our blessed Saviour, were so sensible of, that when they wanted an Apostle, altho' there were doubtless many excellent Persons among them that might think themselves fit for the Place, yet none of them would undertake it of their own Heads; but they all, with one accord, left it to Almighty God, to determine and declare whom he had chosen and called to it; who having, by his Disposal of the Lots they cast, accordingly acquainted them, that *Matthias* was the Person he pitched upon, he was presently numbred with the Apostles.

But

# The Institution of Ministers.

But all this will appear more clearly under the second Head, which I design principally to consider, and that is, the way and manner whereby God hath been pleased to ordain and set apart Persons for his his own Service and Ministry. In speaking to which, I shall not trouble you with any Conjectures how this was done in the Church before *Moses's* time, but shall begin there, where we have a certain Rule to walk by.

Serm. II.

Manner of  
constituting  
Ministers  
in the  
Church of  
God.

In the Day therefore that the Lord smote all the First-Born in the Land of *Ægypt*, he sanctified to himself all the First-Born among the Children of *Israel*, *Numb. 3. 13.* But afterwards, instead of them, he took one whole Tribe, even the Tribe of *Levi*, *ver. 12.* They being about the same number with the First-Born of all *Israel*. For all the Males of the Tribe of *Levi*, from a Month old and upwards, were numbred 22000. and all the First-Born of the Males among the Children of *Israel*, were 22273. So that all the First-Born Males of *Israel*, were only 273 more than the *Levites*, which odd number being redeemed at 5 Sheckles a-piece by the Poll, the whole Tribe of *Levi* was from thenceforward set apart to be employed wholly in the Service of God, instead of all the First-Born in *Israel*, *Num. 3. 8.* And out of this Tribe

who were  
such from  
the begin-  
ning under  
*Moses.*  
The First-  
Born.  
The Tribe  
of *Levi.*



Vol. I.  
 The Family  
 of Aaron.

The First-  
 Born of that  
 Family  
 High-  
 Priests,

Three di-  
 stinct Or-  
 ders of  
 them ;  
 The High-  
 Priest, the  
 Priests, and  
 Levites.

How conse-  
 crated to  
 their Office,  
 each of  
 them by  
 God's Ap-  
 pointment.

he chose one Family, even that of *Aaron*, to minister continually to him in the Priests Office, to burn Incense, to slay and offer Sacrifices, to instruct the People in his Law, and the like. And out of this Family he chose *Aaron* himself; and so the First-Born of that Family all along, to be his High-Priest. To whom he appointed not only the Oversight of all the rest, but likewise some certain Offices, which no other Priests or *Levites* could meddle with.

So that we here have three distinct Orders of Men settled and established by God himself to minister unto him, The High-Priest, the Priests, and the *Levites*. Which last, in *Moses's* time, were employed wholly about the Tabernacle and the Vessels belonging to it; but when the Temple was built, they were also made Treasurers, and Judges, and Porters, and Singers, 1 *Chron.* 23. 45.

Now God having thus constituted these several Orders of Men for his own Service, he gave Directions how they should be all consecrated to their several Offices. *First*, *Aaron* by himself, as the High-Priest, then his Sons as the second or ordinary Priests, *Levit.* 8. And afterwards the *Levites*, *Num.* 8. By which Consecration, not only the Persons then in being, but their Posterity were all Ordained into the same Offices

## The Institution of Ministers.

53

Serm. II

Offices that they themselves were. By *Aaron's* Ordination into the Office of High-Priest, the First-Born or eldest Sons of his Family, were ordained so too. By his Son's Consecration, all their Sons, or the younger Sons of that Family were ordained Priests. And so for the *Levites*, when they were consecrated, all the Males that should ever proceed from them, were consecrated together with them, as being then contained in their Loins. So that although there might be some certain Ceremonies used at their entring upon the Execution of their Office, when they came to Years of Discretion, yet they were not properly ordained or consecrated again; but the Office came to them in course, or if you will *ex traduce*. The Ordination, which their Ancestors had from God himself, being, by virtue of this Institution and Command, propagated and derived down to them. And thus it continued all along, during the *Mosaick* Dispensation, which was about 2000 Years, even until the Death of our Blessed Saviour; which being typified and fore-shewn by the Sacrifices which these Priests offered, the Priesthood it self must needs continue in Force and Virtue till that was accomplished.

*Which Consecration of the first of each Order was derivative upon all their Descendants under that Dispensation.*

And therefore all the while that Christ lived, he made no Alteration at all in it,

E 3

neither

Vol. I.



Accomplished at the Death of Christ.

neither did he ever properly abrogate, or repeal the Laws that were formerly made about it, but when he died, they expired together with him. Both the Time and the End for which they were made, being now accomplished. But from that time forward, though the *Jewish* Nation still continued till the Destruction of *Hierusalem*, which was 40 Years after, yet they had not really any Priesthood among them. The Time for which it was ordained, being now expired.

Under the Christian Oeconomy.

1st. 12 Apostles.

2dly. 70 Disciples.

When our Lord therefore was upon Earth, foreseeing that all the *Mosaick* Orders would cease in course upon his death, and knowing that his Church could never subsist without some such Orders of Men set apart for the Administration of his Word and Sacraments; before he died, he took care to lay the Platform of others, suitable to his own Religion. For which Purpose, out of the many Disciples that followed him, he first chose twelve Apostles; to whom he gave Commission to baptize, to preach the Gospel, and to work Miracles for the Confirmation of it, *Mat.* 10. And afterwards he sent out 70 other Disciples, and gave them Power also to preach the Gospel, and cast out Devils in his Name, *Luke* 10. So that he still kept up the same number of Orders in his Church whilst himself lived, that

that was in the *Jewish Church*; For he himself was truly the High-Priest, of whom they under the Law were only Types. Then there were the 12 Apostles, answerable to the Priests of the second Order; and the 70 Disciples, resembling the great number of *Levites*.

Serm. II.  
Jesus Him-  
self the  
High-Priest.

But all this while we do not read that the Apostles had any solemn Consecration to their Office, during our Saviour's Life. It is said indeed in *Mark 3. 14.* that he ordained 12; but the Words are ἐποίησε δώδεκα, he made or appointed 12 to be his Apostles, or Messengers. But we do not find that he ordained them, so as to confer any **Sacerdotal** Power upon them. He promis'd indeed *St. Peter*, and the rest of the Apostles with him, that he would give them the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, *Matt. 16. 19.* But they were as yet in the hands of the *Levitical* Priesthood; and he would not take them from thence to give them to his Apostles, so long as that Priesthood continued in force, But he was no sooner dead and risen again, but he presently performed his Promise. For then the *Levitical* Priesthood being expired; and by Consequence the Keys, which he had before committed to it by his Servant *Moses*, returning on course into his own Hands, he then according to his Promise gave them to his Apostles.

E 4

For

Vol. I.  
 Evangelical Consecration by Christ's breathing the Holy Spirit upon his 11 Apostles soon after his Resurrection.

For upon the same Day that he rose again, in the Evening, his Apostles being met together, he came to them, and said to them, *Peace be unto you: as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you. And when he had said so, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, receive ye the Holy Ghost. Whose soever Sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them, and whose soever Sins ye retain, they are retained,* John 20. 21, 22, 23. As my Father sent me, even so send I you; that is, As my Father sent me to preach the Gospel, by anointing me with his Holy Spirit, *Isa. 61. 1. Luke 4. 18.* even so, after the self same manner I send you; *Receive ye the Holy Ghost,* at the speaking of which Words, he breathed upon them, and so issued forth the Holy Spirit from himself into them. Which, as it is an undeniable Argument of the Spirit's Procession from the Son as well as from the Father; so it was the highest and truest Consecration of the Apostles that could be, far beyond that of *Aaron* and his Sons. For they were anointed only with material Ointment, which was poured upon *Aaron's* Head, *Levit. 8. 12.* and sprinkled afterwards upon his and his Son's Garments, together with the Blood of the Sacrifice, *ver. 30.* But this was only a Type of that Holy Spirit wherewith the Apostles were anointed by our Lord, when he breathed

# The Institution of Ministers.

breathed it immediately from himself into them. Serm. II.

And now were the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, according to the Promise before-mentioned, given to the Apostles. And therefore our Lord, after he had breathed upon them, saying *Receive ye the Holy Ghost*, he presently adds, *Whose soever Sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them, and whose soever Sins ye retain, they are retained.* Whereby all Sacerdotal Power was now conferred upon the Apostles, even whatsoever is necessary to the Government and Edification of the Church to the World's end. And therefore immediately before his Ascension, the Eleven Apostles being met together again, in the place that he appointed them, our Lord goes to them again, and saith, *All Power is given to me both in Heaven and Earth. Go ye therefore and make all Nations my Disciples, by baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you. And Lo, I am with you alway even unto the end of the World.* That is, I, by my holy Spirit which I have breathed into you, am now with you, and so I am always with you, and your Successours to the end of the World,

*Whereby all Sacerdotal Power was conferred, upon them necessary for the Government or Edification of the Church to the End of the World.*

Now

Vol. I.

*The Number of Apostles fill'd up, by St. Matthias whom Christ chose by Lot, into Judas's Bishoprick.*

Now the Apostles being thus solemnly Ordain'd and Consecrated by Christ himself, and having receiv'd so ample a Commission from him; soon after his Ascension into Heaven, they with some other Disciples, met together, and consulted how to fill up their Number again. For *Judas Iscariot*, who was one of the Twelve, by betraying his Master, had lost both his Office and his Life, and another was now to take his Bishoprick, or Apostleship, according to the Prophecy in the Book of *Psalms*, which *St. Peter* put them in Mind of. And therefore they all agree to have the Number made up again out of these, who had, like the other Apostles, been conversant with our Blessed Saviour, all along from first to last. And they found two considerable Persons among them, who had been so, *Joseph*, surnamed *Justus*, and *Matthias*, both, in their apprehensions, equally qualified for the Place. Yet nevertheless, they would not undertake to chuse either of them. Forasmuch as they themselves, having been choten by Christ himself, it was not fit to take any into their Number, but whom Christ himself had chosen. And therefore, they resolv'd to refer it wholly unto him.

But how could that be done, now that Christ was gone from them into Heaven?  
There

There was no other way but to cast Lots which should be the Parson. A way that had been commonly used in such cases. For by the Command of God himself, Lots were cast upon the two Goats, which should be the Lord's, and which should be the Scape-Goat, *Lev. 16. 8.* The Land of *Canaan* was divided among the twelve Tribes by Lot, *Josh. 18. 6.* *Saul* was chosen King of *Israel* by Lot, *1 Sam. 10. 21.* The several Ministrations and Charges of the Priests, were divided amongst them by Lot, *1 Chron. 24. 5.* There are many such Instances in the *Old Testament*, of referring doubtful Cases to God's decision, by casting Lots upon them: For, as the Wise Man saith, *The Lot is cast into the Lap, but the whole disposing thereof is of the Lord, Prov. 16. 33.*

This course therefore the Apostles took, to know which of these two Persons our Lord would have taken into their Number; but before they cast their Lots, they first Address themselves in a more solemn manner to Christ himself, saying, *Thou Lord, which knowest the Hearts of all Men, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen, that he may take part of this Ministry and Apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own Place;* where we may observe, they do not pray that our Lord would chuse one now, but that he would shew



Vol. I. shew whether of the Two he had chosen already, for so the words run, ἐκ τεύτων τῶν δύο ἓν ἐξελέξω, which one of these Two thou hast chosen, as supposing that he had chosen one of them already, tho' they did not know which. And therefore when they had cast Lots, and the Lot was fallen upon *Matthias*, they took it for granted, as they well might, that he was the Person whom Christ had before chosen to be one of their Number, and therefore without any more ado, *he was numbred with the Eleven Apostles*, so as to make up the Number of Twelve again.

But here it may be asked, how this *Matthias* should be an Apostle of equal Power with the other, seeing he was not present when the other were Ordain'd by our Saviour, and receiv'd the Spirit from him. I answer, that the same doubt may be made concerning *St. Thomas*, for neither was he present when our Lord breathed his Holy Spirit upon his other Apostles, and yet none ever deny'd, but that he was an Apostle of equal Authority with those that were then present. And indeed the Question concerning both, may be clearly answered by a parallel Case: for we read, *Numb. xi.* how that when *Moses* had, by the appointment of God, chosen Seventy of the Elders of *Israel* to be endow'd with his

his Spirit, and had order'd them to go to the Tabernacle of the Congregation, *the Lord came down in a Cloud, and spake unto him, and took of the Spirit that was upon him, and gave it unto the Seventy Elders; and it came to pass, that when the Spirit rested upon them, they Prophefied, and did not cease. But two of the Seventy remain'd in the Camp, Eldad, and Medad; and tho' they were not present, the Spirit rested upon them also, and they Prophefied as well as the other.* And this Remark is put upon them, that *they were of them that were written, but went not to the Tabernacle,* Numb. xi. 25, 26.

The Case is the self same here: For as *Eldad* and *Medad*, being chosen by *Moses* into the Number of the Seventy, receiv'd the same Spirit which was given to the other Sixty Eight, altho' they were not present at the Place where the Lord came down in the Cloud to them; so here, *Thomas* and *Matthias* being in the Number of the Twelve which were chosen by our Lord to be his Apostles, altho' they were not present at the Place where our Lord gave the Holy Spirit to the other Ten, yet they receiv'd it as effectually to all intents and purposes as the other did. For wheresoever they were, the Holy Ghost breathed upon the Apostles as such, rested upon them also, because they also were chosen into the Number

Vol. I. ber of Apostles, even *Matthias* himself, as  
 I observ'd before.

This formal Admission of St. *Matthias* into the Number of the Apostles, was upon one of the Ten Days between the Ascension of our Lord to Heaven, and the Descent of the Holy Spirit upon the Day of *Pentecost*, Act. 2. And then was fulfilled what our Saviour had Promised his Apostles, saying, *And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever, even the Spirit of Truth*, Joh. 14. 16. which therefore is call'd another Comforter, because he was to supply our Saviour's Place and Presence upon Earth; guide his Apostles into all Truth, and direct, assist, and order the Affairs of his Church, until his Coming again. And therefore it was, that now, upon the Day of *Pentecost*, he made, as it were, his publick Entrance into the Church, appearing Visibly to the Disciples, and enabling them to speak all manner of Languages, in order to the Conversion of all Nations to the Faith of Christ.

Now this Holy Spirit of Christ, having thus taken upon him this Office, to shew that he could and would do for the Church whatsoever our Saviour himself, either would or could, was he still present in Person,

son, as well as by this his Spirit : hence as he had chosen Twelve Apostles, his Spirit chuses two other, in as plain and apparent a manner as Christ himself had done it. For there being *certain Prophets and Teachers in the Church at Antioch, Barnabas, Simeon, Lucius, Manaen and Saul, as they Ministred to the Lord and Fasted, the Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the Work whereunto I have called them, Act. 13. 1, 2.* From whence we may observe, that he had before this call'd them to the Work; and now he expressly Commands the Prophets and Teachers there present, to separate, or set them apart for it. He did not employ the Apostles that were Consecrated by our Lord to do it, that their Consecration might appear to be wholly from himself; and so the Church might rest fully satisfied, that altho' our Saviour, the Head of it, be gone to Heaven, yet he hath still, and always will have one upon Earth, that can Exercise his Power so effectually, that he himself may be truly said to be always with it, as he said he would. But howsoever, notwithstanding that he himself had called them, yet he would have them publicly Or-

Serm. II.

Two more called to be Apostles by the Holy Spirit, the Comforter, viz Barnabas and Saul.

Yet ordained by the Governours of the Church.

after-

Vol. I.



And that by  
Imposition  
of Hands.

afterwards pretend to, yet he would never employ them in his Work and Ministry, until they were publickly Ordain'd, and Separated for it, by the Governours of the Church empower'd by him to do it. And then he would have it done too by the Imposition of Hands, to shew that this was the way that he had appointed for it. For it is said, that *when they had Fasted, and Prayed, and laid their Hands on them, they sent them away*, verse 3. or as the word ἀπέλυσαν signifies, they dismissed them, or let them depart: For they were not properly sent by them, but by the Holy Ghost, as it is expressly said in the following words; so then they being sent forth, ἐκπεμφθέντες, were sent forth by the Holy Ghost, and as the Twelve were sent by Christ, so were these two, Barnabas and Saul, sent by his Holy Spirit, and so were as truly his Apostles as the other. And therefore one of them, even Saul, otherwise called Paul, is not only called an Apostle of Jesus Christ, but saith expressly, that he was so, *not of Men, nor by Man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father*, Gal. 1. 1. because he was thus sent by the Holy Ghost himself, the same God with the Father and the Son.

From whence we may observe, by the way, upon what good grounds the last Revisers


vifers of the *Common-Prayer*, added two new Holy Days in the Kalendar, which had been omitted in the former Editions, even the Conversion of *St Paul*, and *St. Barnabas's Day*; for these being Apostles of the same Power and Dignity with the other Twelve, there was all the Reason in the World that we should Commemorate and give God Thanks for them as well as for the other. But to distinguish them from the others, the Eves or Vigils of these Days, are not appointed to be observed so as those of the others are.

Now the Apostles being all thus Ordain'd and Consecrated by Christ's Holy Spirit, they were thereby Invested with full Power and Authority, not only to Preach and Propagate the Gospel, and to add to the Church daily such as should be saved, and to Rule and Govern the said Church at present, but likewise to Institute and Establish such Officers in it, by whom it may be rightly Govern'd according to our Saviour's Mind in all future Ages. In order whereunto, the Twelve first Instituted the Office of Deacons, upon occasion of the *Grecians* murmuring against the *Hebrews*, because their Widows were neglected in the daily Ministrations. For, it not being fitting that the Apostles themselves should leave the Word to serve Tables, they ordered seven

*These Apostles, as Governors of the Church, Instituted the Office of Deacons, to Minister in the Church by Imposition of Hands.*

F

Men

Vol. I.  Men of honest Report, to be chosen out for that Work; which seven being set before the Apostles, they Pray'd, and then laid their Hands on them, *Acts* 6. 6. By which Imposition of Hands, they received Power, not only to look after the Widows and Poor, but also to Baptize and Preach the Gospel. For *Stephen* who was one of the Seven, was no sooner Ordain'd, but we presently find him Preaching so powerfully, that the *Jews* were not able to resist the Wisdom and the Spirit by which he spake, *Acts* 6. 10. And *Philip*, another of the Seven, Preached Christ so effectually to the *Samaritans*, that they receiv'd the Word gladly, and were Baptized of him, and so was the *Eunuch* too, that was Treasurer to *Candace*, Queen of the *Æthiopians*, *Acts* 8. 38. And this Office of Deacons, thus Instituted by the Apostles, hath continued in the Church ever since, and so must do to the end of the World.

But these Deacons being Ordain'd only to Minister in the Church, they could have no share in the Government of it, which was the main thing that the Apostles were to take care of. And therefore considering that the Spirit, which they had receiv'd, must according to Christ's Promise, abide with his Church for ever, it was necessary they should find out some way to Transfer  
it

it upon others, and so successively from one to another, to the World's end. Now they found by Experience, what they were doubtless directed to by the Holy Ghost himself, that upon whomsoever they laid their Hands, the Holy Ghost presently fell upon them. Thus when *Philip*, the aforesaid Deacon, had Converted and Baptized the *Samaritans*, the Apostles sent *Peter* and *John* to them, who having Pray'd, and laid their Hands on them, they received the Holy Ghost, *Acts* 8. 17. *Philip* did not so much as offer to lay his Hands upon them, and if he had, it would not have done the work, because he was only a Deacon, and none of the Apostles, who had so receiv'd the Holy Ghost themselves, as to have Power to confer it upon others. As we s<sup>ee</sup> St. *Paul* also did, by laying his Hands upon the Disciples at *Ephesus*, *Acts* 19. 6.

Hence it is, that this Power always was, and still is, appropriated only to the Apostles themselves, and their Successors, the Bishops of the Church. And it is that which we now call Confirmation, when a Bishop rightly Ordain'd, after the Example of the Holy Apostles, Prays for those that are Baptiz'd, and lays his Hand upon their Heads, that they may receive the Gifts and Graces of God's Holy Spirit, to Confirm them in the Faith, and in all Goodness; which duly



Vol. I.


perform'd, is certainly as effectual now as ever, in those who are rightly dispos'd and qualify'd for it; as, Blessed be God, we find at this very day, to our unspeakable Comfort.

The Apostles therefore, finding by Experience that the Holy Ghost was given by the laying on of Hands, for the Confirmation of Believers; they could not but conclude this to be a proper way also, for the conferring of it upon those who were to succeed them in the Government of the Church, Especially considering, that this was the Way whereby *Joshua*, by the Command of God himself, was constituted the Successor of *Moses*; for *Moses* laid his Hands upon him, by which means the Spirit of Wisdom came upon him, *Numb.* 23. 23. *Deut.* 34. 9. From whence this Rite was commonly used by the *Jewish Church*, in the Constitution of their Governours; and the Holy Ghost himself did not only approve of it, but appointed it to be used in the Ordination of *Barnabas* and *Saul*. Upon these and the like Considerations, the Apostles took this course for the conveying of the Spirit, which they had received, to their Successors in all Ages. For the way whereby Christ bestowed it upon the Twelve, by breathing on them, was proper and peculiar to himself, from whom  
the

*By Imposition of Hands, they transferred the Spirit of God upon others whom they designed for Governours of the Church to succeeding Generations.*

the Spirit proceedeth. But this was a way which both they and their Successors in all Ages would be capable of. For their Bodies, as well as Souls, being made the Temples of the Holy Ghost at their Consecration, whensoever they laid their Hands upon any Person, so as to touch his Body, with a design of transferring the same Spirit upon him, it is easie to imagine, how such a Person comes to be endow'd with it. Especially, seeing the Holy Ghost had Instituted and Appointed this to be the way of doing it, and therefore it is impossible it should ever fail. Insomuch, that as the same Power which was given to *Aaron* at his Consecration, was propagated and continued in that Church by successive Generation from Father to Son, so long as the Church it self lasted: So is the same Spirit and Power, which was given to the Apostles at their Consecration, propagated and continued in the Church of Christ, by the successive Imposition of Hands from one to another, and will be, so long as the World endureth.

This therefore being the Method that the Holy Apostles, by the direction of the Spirit itself, had agreed upon before their Dispersions wheresoever any of them went, so soon as they had Converted any considerable Number to the Faith, enough to


Vol. I.  make a Church, before they departed from them, they still laid their Hands upon one, whom they judg'd the fittest among them, and so left the same Spirit, which they themselves had, with him, for the Government and Edification of that Church, For whosoever was thus Ordain'd, did by that means receive the Spirit. And therefore, St. Paul having thus Ordain'd *Timothy* at *Ephesus*, in his second Epistle to him, he useth these Words, *Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stir up the gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on of my Hands,* 2 Tim. i. 6. And what this Gift of God was, he declares in the following Words, saying, *For God hath not given us the Spirit of Fear, but of Power, and of Love, and of a sound Mind.* As if he should have said, For that Spirit which God hath given us, even me and thee, is not a Spirit of Fear, but of Power, to instruct and govern the Church; of Love, to regulate our Passions in the doing it; and of a sound Mind, to keep both stedfast in the Faith. Plainly implying, that by the Laying of his Hands upon him, God had given the same Spirit to *Timothy*, that he himself, the Apostle, had.

But elsewhere, the same Apostle tells *Timothy* that this Gift was given him by Prophecy, *with the laying on of the Hands of*  
*the*

the Presbytery, 1 Tim. 4. 14. From whence it may seem, that some of the Elders of the Church join'd with St. Paul, in laying their Hands upon him; and yet St. Paul ascribes it wholly to the laying on of his Hands, and saith, the Gift was given him by that, and only with the other, because he being the only Apostle that laid on his Hands, and so the only Person that had Power by that means to confer the Holy Spirit; altho' it was given to him, together with the laying on of the others Hands upon him, yet it was not given by that, but by the laying on of St. Paul's Hands, as he himself saith. As it is in our Church at this time, and so hath been in the Latin for many Ages, in the Ordination of a Priest; the Priests there present, join with the Bishop in their laying their Hands upon him, and yet he is Ordain'd only by the Bishop's laying on his Hands. For how many Priests soever lay their Hands upon anothers Head, they can never make him a real Priest, unless there be a Bishop with them; but a Bishop, by the Imposition of his Hands, can make a Priest, altho' there be never another Priest with him. Neither doth the Law require, that any Priests should be present at such Ordination, but only that the Bishop, with the Priests present, (if there happen to be any) shall lay

Serm. II.

Apostles  
only could  
ordain or  
consecrate  
others.

Vol. I.  their Hands upon him that is to be Ordain'd, the Imposition of the Priests Hands, being only to signifie their Consent, that such a Person should be receiv'd into their Order, and so take off the blame from the Bishop, in case he should prove to have been unworthy of it. But still, it is only by the Imposition of the Bishop's Hands that he is made a Priest, as *St. Paul* saith, that *Ti-mothy* receiv'd the Spirit, by the laying on of *his* Hands, notwithstanding that the *Pres-bytery* join'd with him in it.

But of this, the Spirit's being given by such Imposition of Hands, so that it is by *him* Principally that the Person is Ordain'd, we have a very remarkable Instance in the *Acts* of the Apostles, *Chap. 20.* where we read how *St. Paul* having Ordain'd many Elders or Bishops in *Asia*, he summon'd them to a Visitation that he held at *Miletus*, and in the Charge he gave them, among other Things, he said, *Take heed therefore to your selves, and to all the Flock, over which the Holy Ghost hath made you Overseers, or Bishops, ver. 28.* For from hence it appears, that when they were Ordain'd by the Imposition of the Apostles Hands, the Holy Ghost so came upon them, that he Constituted them in the Office they were Ordain'd to: It was *He* that made them Bishops, *the Apostle* and whosoever else might

might join with him in laying on of Hands, were only his Instruments, the Holy Ghost was the principal Agent. And so questionless he is, and always will be, in all such Ordinations. So that all who are regularly Ordain'd, may be truly and properly said to receive their Power and Commission from the Holy Ghost, that is then conferr'd upon them, and so from Christ himself.

*Those so ordain'd by them, have their Power and Commission from the Holy Ghost.*

Having thus considered the Course that the Apostles, by Christ's Direction, took and instituted in the Church, for the conferring of Holy Orders, so as that they might transfer the same Spirit which they themselves receiv'd, upon those who were admitted unto them, and so continue it in the Church for ever: We may further observe, that besides that of Deacons beforemention'd, they found it necessary to Establish two other Orders in the Church, to remain through all Ages: first their own, which we now call the Order of Bishops, who are therefore by the Ancients commonly term'd the Apostles Successors, because that by a successive Imposition of Hands, continued all along from the Apostles themselves, they receive the same Spirit and Power which the Apostles had, not only for the Administration of the Word and Sacraments, but likewise for the Government of the Church, and for the conferring of the Holy Spirit by the Imposition of their Hands,

*Whether Bishops their Successors in Power.*

as

Vol. I. as the Apostles did, both for the Confirmation of Believers, and likewise for the Ordination of Persons into their own and other Offices in the Church.

*Or Priests,  
for the Ad-  
ministrati-  
on of the or-  
dinary  
means of  
Grace.*

The other Order, is that of Priest-hood, which being Instituted for the due Administration of all the ordinary means of Grace, it was necessary, that they who were admitted into this Order also, should have the Holy Ghost, the Fountain of all Grace, conferred upon them, to influence their several Administrations, without which it is impossible they should ever attain their end. And hence it is, that according to the Practice of the Catholick and Apostolick Church, tho' not in that of Deacons, yet in the Ordination of Priests, as you will see presently, the Bishop when he lays his Hand severally upon every one that receives that Order, he saith, *Receive the Holy Ghost for the Office and Work of a Priest in the Church of God, now committed unto thee by the Imposition of our Hands; whose Sins thou dost forgive, they are forgiven, and whose Sins thou dost retain, they are retained.* Where we may observe, that altho' some other words are inserted to determine and distinguish the Office committed to them; yet all the same words are repeated, which our Lord himself used at the Ordination of his Apostles; which the Catholick Church always judg'd necessary; not only in Imitation of our Blessed

Blessed Saviour, but likewise, because that **Serm. II.**  
the Persons who are Ordain'd Priests in his Church, are to Preach the same Word, Administer the same Sacraments, and Exercise the same Power in the Censures of the Church as the Apostles themselves did. And therefore it is necessary that they should be endu'd with the same Spirit, Ordain'd after the same manner, and entrusted with the same Power of the Keys, as the Apostles themselves were. By which Means, the Means of Grace and Salvation Administred by Priests thus Ordain'd, become as effectual to those that use them aright, as when they were Administred by the Apostles themselves. The Spirit, which they receive by this Imposition of Hands, being always ready to assist at their several Administrations, and to Bless and Sanctifie them to those who are duly prepared and disposed for them.

Now from what we have thus briefly, as the Occasion would permit, discours'd upon this Subject; I shall draw only two inferences; whereof the first concerns those who are now to be admitted into Holy Orders, either Priests or Deacons. For from what ye have now heard, ye may easily see the Duty as well as Dignity of the Office you are call'd to, to be Ministers of Christ, and Stewards of the manifold Mysteries of God. And therefore I hope you have prepar'd your selves, accord-

*Ministers  
to consider  
the Duty  
and Dignity  
of their  
High Call-  
ing.*



Vol. I.

according to the directions that have been given you, by Prayer and Fasting, for so great an Undertaking; and so are both duly dispos'd to receive the Power and Spirit that shall be committed to you, and also fully resolved by the Grace of God, to exercise and improve it for your Master's use. For which Purpose, as I do not doubt, but you have seriously consider'd what Questions will be Propounded to you, and what Answers ye must give to them; so I must entreat you to keep it always in your Minds, how solemnly you this Day devoted your selves to the Service of God and his Church, and what Vows and Promises you made in his Presence, to be diligent in Praying, in reading the Holy Scriptures, and in framing your Lives accordingly, in Ministring the Doctrine, the Sacraments, and the Discipline of Christ, as the Lord Comanded, and as this Church and Realm hath received the same; to drive away all erroneous and strange Doctrines, and to Maintain and set forward, as much as in you lies; Quietness, Love and Peace, among Christian People, and reverently to obey your Ordinary, and those to whom is committed the Charge and Government over you. If ye do these things according as ye then Promise, ye will save both your selves and them that hear you; but otherwise, after all your Preaching unto others, you your selves will be Cast-aways. The

## The Institution of Ministers.

77

The other Inference respects all here present: For from the Premises duly weighed, you cannot but all infer, both the Necessity and Dignity of those Holy Orders which are now to be conferred. The Necessity, in that the means of Salvation cannot be Administred effectually without them; and the Dignity, in that they are effectually Administred by them. Upon which account, you cannot but acknowledge, there is a real Honour and Respect due to those who are thus Ordain'd, though not for their own, yet for their Office sake, and for his sake, whose Officers and Ministers they are, in conveying the greatest Blessings to you, that you are, or ever can be capable of.

Serm. II.  
Laitie to respect Ministers suitably to the Necessity and Dignity of their Office.

Wherefore, as *St. Paul* said to *Timothy*, *Let no man despise thy Youth*, 1 Tim. 4. 12. So say I to you, Do not despise Christ's Clergy for their Youth, or Poverty, or upon any other account whatsoever. But esteem them as ye ought for his sake whose Clergy they are. And thank God that you have such a Clergy among you, as is Ordain'd according to Christ's own Institution, and endow'd with the same Spirit which he breathed into his Holy Apostles, handed down from them to us, by a continued and uninterrupted Succession. Which is the great Glory of our Church, and that which you can never sufficiently thank God for.  
As

Vol. I. As considering, that by this means you have the Word and Sacraments so truly and powerfully Administred among you, that nothing but the extream Neglect of your selves, can hinder any of you from being Happy for ever.

*And to use  
all the  
means of  
Grace  
preach'd out  
to them in  
the Aposto-  
lick Church  
of Eng-  
land.*

But that you may all be so, you must not think it enough, that you have such a Clergy Ordain'd among you, nor that the Means of Grace are so duly and regularly Administred to you, but you must Exercise your selves continually in them, otherwise your having of them will signifie nothing, unless it be to sink you lower into the Abyss of Misery. Neither must you use only some, but all the Means that are appointed for the begetting or increasng of true Grace and Vertue in you. For if you neglect any, you had even as good neglect all. One being as necessary in its kind as another, and all assisting one another, in order to the Attainment of the End. And after all, tho' you use the Means, and all the Means, you must use them only as Means; and therefore, not rest in them, nor trust on them, but only upon him, who hath appointed them, and hath sent his Holy Spirit to move in them, to make them effectual to the Purposes for which they are used.

Do but this, and you will soon find, by your own Experience, what infinite cause  
you

*The Institution of Ministers.*

79

you have to Bless God for your living in a Church where Holy Orders are conferred, and by consequence the means of Salvation Administred so exactly, according to the Institution and Appointment of Christ our Saviour; To whom with the Father and the Holy Ghost, be all Honour and Glory, now and for ever, *Amen.*

---

S E R-

---



---

# S E R M O N III.

---

Manner of their Institution  
with us.

---

2 C O R. IV. I.

*Therefore seeing we have this Ministry, as we have received Mercy, we faint not.*

**T**HE last publick Ordination that was held here, happening upon St. *Matthias's* Day, from his formal and solemn Admission into the number of the Apostles, I took Occasion to discourse in general of the publick Admission of Persons to serve in the sacred Ministry of Christ's Church, which we now call Ordination; shewing both the Necessity of it, and likewise the ancient way and manner of performing it. Now this falling out upon St. *Matthew's* Day, who was both an Apostle and Evangelist,  
I have

I have chosen this part of the Epistle appointed for the Day, from whence to treat briefly of our Admission into the Ministry of the Gospel here spoken of, as it is now celebrated in our Church, according to the ancient Way and Manner before-mentioned.

Serm. III.

The Scope of the Text

That Ministers be by no means discouraged in the discharge of their great Trust;

But before we come to that, we must observe, that the Apostle having, in the fore-going Chapter, fully declared and proved the Excellency of the Evangelical Ministry beyond that of the Legal; he thence infers, that he and others, with whom this glorious Ministry was entrusted, having received so great a Mercy, did not faint, or grow weary in the Execution of it, nor were ever discouraged by any Straights or Difficulties they met with in it, as being fully persuaded, that their faithful Performance of their Duty in it, was a Matter of that extraordinary Consequence, both to themselves and others, that all the Troubles that could ever befall them for it, should never in the least dishearten them; but they were resolved, whatsoever came of it, faithfully to discharge the Trust that was reposed in them. *Therefore seeing we have this Ministry, as we have received Mercy we faint not.*

And this certainly is left upon Record, as a standing Rule for the Ministers of the Gospel to walk by in all Ages and places of

G

Vol. I.



of the World; especially those of our Church, who have the same Ministry or Authority to administer the Word and Sacraments conferred upon them, which the Apostle here speaks of, by being ordain'd regularly, according to the way and manner which the Apostles themselves, by the Direction of Christ and his holy Spirit, instituted in his Church, and with all the Care and Diligence, with all the Decency and Order, with all the Piety and Devotion that can be used or exercised upon any occasion whatsoever.

But this being that which I principally intend to insist upon at this time; without any further Preface or Apology, I shall, by the Assistance of God, run through the whole Office of our Church for the Ordination of Deacons and Priests, and shew the Excellency of the Course and Method she takes for the admitting any of her Members into the Ministry of the Gospel; that so they who are to be Ordained, may understand what great Obligations lie upon them, not to be either Idle, or Faint-hearted, but Diligent and Courageous in the Discharge of the Office committed to them; and all others may see what Cause they have to bless God, that they live in a Church, wherein the Apostolical Institution is so strictly observed, and so much Care taken  
in

*But diligent and courageous, 'cause regularly Ordained, after the Apostles Institution.'*

in the chusing and ordaining those who are to have the Charge of their Souls. Serm. III.

*First*, therefore, that all the pious and devout Members of the Church dispersed over the whole Kingdom, may know the Times when it is to be done, and so improve the Interest they have in Heaven, for God's Blessing and Assistance in the Management of so great a Work; There are four set Days in every Year, all *Sundays*, appointed for it, and in the respective Weeks immediately foregoing, called *Ember Weeks*, three Days are set apart to be spent in Fasting and Prayer to God, that he would so guide and govern the Minds of his Servants, the Bishops, and Pastors of his Church, that they may lay Hands suddenly on no Man, but Faithfully and Wisely make choice of fit Persons to serve in the Sacred Ministry of his Church; and also that he would give his Grace and Heavenly Benediction to all that shall be then Ordained to any Holy Function, that both by their Life and Doctrine, they may set forth his Glory, and set forward the Salvation of all Men.

*The Method of Ordaining Priests and Deacons in the Church of England;*

*At 4 Ember Seasons after Fasting and Prayer.*

Now whilst all good People are thus jointly imploring God's Aid and Direction, of them in it, the Bishops, in their several Dioceses, are considering whom to chuse; and examining the Fitness of those who

G 2

offer



Vol. I.



*In proper  
Qualifica-  
tions, ac-  
cording to  
Law.*

offer themselves to be admitted to any Holy Function, either of Deacon or Priest, according to these general Rules which the Church for that purpose has laid down before them. As *First*, That none shall be admitted Deacon, except he be 23 Years of Age, unless he have a Faculty; And every Man that is to be admitted Priest, shall be full 24 Years Old. That none be Ordained, either Deacon or Priest, who hath not first some certain Place where he may exercise his Function, *Can.* 33. nor except he Subscribe to the three Articles mentioned in *Can.* 36. that is, *First*, to the King's Supremacy, in all Causes and over all Persons, as well Ecclesiastical as Temporal. *Secondly*, to the Book of Common-Prayer, and ordering of Bishops, Priests, and Deacons: that it contains nothing contrary to the Word of God; that it may be lawfully used, and that he himself will use that and none other. *Thirdly*, to the 39 Articles, acknowledging them to be all agreeable to the Word of God.

*After due  
Examina-  
tion by, and  
sufficient  
Testimoni-  
als exhibi-  
ted to, the  
Bishop.*

And besides all this, none must be admitted to Holy Orders, except he can give an Account of his Faith in *Latin*, according to the said 39 Articles, and he be able to confirm the same by sufficient Testimonies out of the Holy Scriptures. And moreover, except he then exhibit Letters  
Testimo-

Testimonial of his good Life and Conversation, under the Seal of some College in *Cambridge* or *Oxford*, where he remained before, or else of Three or Four grave Ministers, together with the Subscription and Testimony of other credible Persons, who have known his Life and Behaviour by the space of Three Years next before.

According to these Rules every Bishop in his Diocese, either by himself, or some Minister deputed by him, is obliged to examine those who come to be admitted into the Ministry of the Church; and if, upon due Examination and Enquiry, he find that they are of the Age required, have a real Title, Subscribe to the 39 Articles, and can give a good Account of their Faith, and good Proof of their sober and pious Life; then he makes choice of them, otherwise he rejects them and lays them aside, as unfit for the Ministry.

When any are thus approved of, and chosen by the Bishop, to be admitted into Holy Orders, he appoints them to meet him at the Cathedral, or some Parish-Church in his Diocese, where after Divine Service, and a Sermon fitted to the Occasion, the Archdeacon, or his Deputy, presents first those who are to be admitted Deacons to him, as he sits near to the Communion Table, in the Presence of the

Vol. I.



whole Congregation then present. Upon which the Bishop adviseth him to take heed that they whom he presents, be apt and meet, for their Learning and Godly Conversation, to exercise their Ministry duly, to the Honour of God, and the edifying of the Church. To which the Archdeacon Answers, That he has enquired of them, as to their Lives, and examin'd them as to their Learning, and thinks them to be so, even apt and meet for the Ministry they undertake. After which, that the whole Congregation may be satisfied as well as the Bishop, of their Fitness for the Office; he requires, that if any of them know any Impediment, or notable Crime in any of the Persons to be Ordained, for which he ought not to be received into the Ministry, they would now come forth and shew what that Crime is. So that if any of you know any such Crime or Impediment in any of the Persons to be now Ordained, it is your Fault if they be Ordained, for you may hinder it if you will; nay, ye are bound to do it, by discovering what Objections ye have against it.

*Notwithstanding which, they may be rejected, if any alledge an just Impediment at the Time of Ordination.*

From whence ye may observe by the way, that whatsoever disorderly or unworthy Persons are admitted to Holy Orders, ye must not blame the Bishop, but yourselves, or those that know them, for it.

For

For it cannot be supposed, that he should have the Personal Knowledge of every one that comes to him for Orders; all that he can do, is to enquire of them, and consider what Credit is to be given to the Letters Testimonial which they bring to him, wherein it may be possible for him to be imposed upon. But they who do not only personally know them, but know them to be of so wicked and loose a Conversation, that they ought not to be received into the Ministry, and yet do not acquaint the Bishop with it, either before, or when he requires them to do it in the Face of the Congregation, they ought to bear all the Blame now, and must answer for it another Day.

Serm.  
III.

*Here the Bishops are not to be blamed, but the People, who know it, if any unworthy Persons are admitted.*

After this, if no Crime be objected, the Bishop, commending those that are to be Ordained, to the Prayers of the Congregation, he reads the *Litany* with a Clause inserted in it, proper for the Occasion, and so hath not only the joint Consent of the whole Congregation, that they should be Ordained, but also their joint Prayers and Supplications to God for them. And then proceeding to the Communion-Service, after the Epistle, he Administers the Oath of Supremacy to them: Wherein they solemnly Swear, that they utterly testify and declare, that the King is

Vol. I. the only supream Governour of this Realm. And that no Foreign Prince or Prelate, and therefore no Bishop or Pope of *Rome*, hath, or ought to have any Authority or Jurisdiction here. And that they utterly renounce all such Foreign Powers, and promise from henceforth, that they will bear Faith and true Allegiance to the King's or Queen's Highness, their Heirs and Lawful Successors, &c.

None admitted  
thereto but  
who re-  
nounce  
Popery.

From which Oath, as imposed on all that are Ordained, there are several things worthy to be observed. As *First*, how careful our Church is, that no Papist should be admitted into her Ministry; for he that takes this Oath doth *ipso facto* renounce Popery, for he renounceth the Pope himself, and all that Supremacy and Authority, he pretends to in this Kingdom. And then how ridiculous and absurd must it needs be for any to imagine that the Clergy of *England* should favour Popery, when they cannot be made Clergy-men without renouncing it. Hence also we may observe how strictly all that take this Oath are obliged to bear Faith and true Allegiance to the King or Queen, and their Heirs and Successors, as strict as any Oath can bind them. And therefore what they who were Ordained, and so took this Oath, and afterwards turned Traytors and Rebels, what

what, I say, they will answer, for themselves, I dread to think of: But let them look to that. As for you, who are to take this Oath now, I advise you to remember it as long as ye live; and be as faithful in the keeping, as I hope ye are sincere in the taking of it.

The Oath being thus Administred to every one that is to be Ordain'd, the Bishop Propounds several Questions to them; to which, every one is bound to Answer for himself, according to what is prescrib'd; and all this is done publickly, in the Presence of the People, that they also may be Witnesses of it.

The first Question is,

*Do you trust that you are inwardly moved by the Holy Ghost, to take upon you this Office and Ministration, to serve God, for the promoting of his Glory, and the Edifying of his People?*

*who trust that they are called by the Holy Ghost to the respective Offices.*

A great Question indeed, and that which no Man can give a true and positive Answer to, without having searched very narrowly into his own Heart, and seriously considered the bent and inclinations of his Soul. But it is a Question very necessary to be Propounded: For, the Holy Ghost now supplies the Place and Room of our Blessed Saviour, in his Church Militant here on Earth. And therefore, as it was by him, that the several Offices themselves were at first

first Constituted, so it is by him, that Men are call'd to the Execution of them; and it is by him alone, that all Ecclesiastical Ministrations, perform'd by such Officers, are made effectual to the Purposes for which they are appointed. And therefore the Church is bound to take Care, that none be admitted into her Ministry, but such as she believes and hopes to be call'd to it by the Holy Ghost. But she can have no Ground to believe this, but only from the Testimony of the Persons themselves, none but themselves being acquainted with the Motions of God's Spirit upon their own Hearts. And therefore the Bishop requires them to deal plainly and faithfully with him and the Church, and to tell him, whether they really trust, that they are moved by the Holy Ghost to take this Office upon them? To which every one is bound to Answer, *I trust so*; not that he knows it, or is certain of it, for it is possible that his Heart may deceive him in it, but that he trusts or hopes it is so.

But what ground can any one have to trust, that he is moved by the Holy Ghost to take the Ministry upon him? To that, I answer, in short, that if a Man finds, that upon due Examination, the Bishop of the Diocese where he is to serve, is satisfied of his Abilities and Qualifications for the Ministry,

## *Institution with us.*

91

Serm.  
III.



nistry ; and that his great End and Design in undertaking it, is to serve God, for the promoting of his Glory, and the Edifying of his People ; he hath good Grounds to trust, that he is moved to it by the Holy Ghost, it being only by him, that any Man can be duly qualified for it, and moved to take it upon him, out of so good and pious a Design as that is. But if either of these things be wanting ; as if a Man be not fitted for the Office, he may conclude, he is not call'd to it by the Holy Ghost, for he neither calls, nor useth any but fit Instruments in what he doth ; or if a Man be moved to it, out of a Design, not to do good, but to get Applause or Preferment in the World, he may thence infer, that he is not moved by the Spirit of God, but by the Spirit of Pride and Covetousness to it ; and then can have no ground to expect, that the Holy Ghost should ever bless and assist him in the Execution of his Office. According to these Rules therefore, they, who are to be now Ordain'd, may discern, whether they can truly give the Answer requir'd to this great Question that will be Propounded to them. As for their Qualifications for it, the Bishop hath already approved of them ; but as to their main End and Design, in undertaking the Ministry, that must be left



Vol. I. left to God and their own Consciences, who alone know it, and so can best judge, whether they can truly say, that they trust they are moved to it by the Holy Ghost.

Who are no more Schismatics than Papists.

The next Question propounded is, *Do you think that you are truly call'd according to the Will of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the due Order of this Realm, to the Ministry of the Church?*

Which Question seems to be Propounded, that the Church may know, whether they be fully satisfied in their own Minds of the Legality of the Orders that they are to receive in our Church, and so to prevent both *Papists* and *Schismatics* from receiving of them. For none that are really such, can truly say, as every one who is Ordain'd, is bound to answer; *I think so.*

Who believe the Canonical Scriptures.

In the next place, the Bishop asketh them, whether they unfeignedly believe all the Canonical Scriptures of the *Old* and *New Testament*? For unless they do so, they are not fit to be Ministers of the Word and Sacraments contain'd and prescrib'd in them. And therefore every one answers, *I do believe them.*

Hitherto, the Questions have been only concerning their present Opinion and Faith. But they which follow, concern their future

Serm.  
III.

ture Behaviour, and Diligence, and Faithfulness in discharging the Office committed to them; and therefore their Answers are all so many solemn Promises made to God and his Church, to act accordingly. Obliging themselves in the Presence of God, that they will diligently Read the Holy Scriptures, and gladly execute the whole Office of a Deacon, there declared to them; that they will apply all their Diligence to frame and fashion their own Lives, and the Lives of their Families, according to the Doctrine of Christ, and reverently obey their Ordinary. For being asked by the Bishop, whether they will do these things or no, every one answers, *I will, or, I will do so by the Help of God; or I will endeavour my self, the Lord being my Helper.* Which Promises being so solemnly made before God and his Church, are certainly as binding as if they were made upon Oath, and ought to be as Religiously observ'd. Insomuch, that as all Christians, as such, should always remember, and keep the Vows and Promises they made, when they were Baptized; so all Ministers, as such, should always remember, and keep those Vows and Promises which they made when they were Ordained. For which Purposes, it is very convenient, if not necessary, for us often to read over the Office of Ordination, or at least that part  
of

*Who resolve to be diligent and faithful in the discharge of their Office, Regulation of their own Lives and Families, according to the Mind of Christ, and Obedience to Superiours.*

Vol. I. of it which contains the Answers and Promises which we made to God and his Church, when we were received into the Ministry of the Gospel.

Such, by Imposition of the Bishop's Hands, are allowed to execute the Office of a Deacon.


Now, every one having thus obliged himself faithfully to discharge the Office that shall be Conferred upon him, and to Behave himself according to the Precepts of the Gospel, through the whole Course of his Life: The Bishop then lays his Hands severally, upon the Head of every one that is to be Ordain'd Deacon; and saith, *Take thou Authority to Execute the Office of a Deacon in the Church of God committed unto thee, in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.* He lays his Hands upon them, as the Apostles did upon those whom they Ordain'd Deacons, *Acts 6. 6.* And so he gives them Authority to Execute the Office of a Deacon, not in his own Name, but in the Name of the most Blessed Trinity, whose Ministers they are now made. And therefore the Bishop delivers to every one of them the *New Testament*, saying, *Take thou Authority to Read the Gospel in the Church of God, and to Preach the same, if thou be thereto Licensed by the Bishop himself.*

By which means, they who are thus Ordain'd are now enabled to Read the Gospel with Authority, as the Ministers of Christ, whose Gospel it is. But they are not to Preach,

Preach, except they are Licensed to do it by the Bishop himself. For the Supream Care of all the Souls in his Diocese, being committed unto him; it is not fitting that any should undertake to Expound the Mysteries of the Gospel there, without his Leave and Approbation. Serm.  
III.

• All that are Ordain'd Deacons, having now Authority to Read the Gospel, the Bishop accordingly appoints one of them to Read the Gospel on the Occasion, as a Sign and Earnest of that Authority which is now committed to them. And then if there be no Priests to be Ordain'd, he proceeds in the Communion.

But if there be any to be Ordain'd Priests at the same time, they being before Presented to the Bishop, to be admitted to the Order of Priesthood, after the same manner as the Deacons were, and with the same Cautions, both to him that Presents them, and to the People that are present; the Bishop Administers to them also the Oath of Supremacy, before spoken of, and then Reads to them a very Grave and Pious Discourse of the great Dignity and Importance of the Office whereunto they are call'd; exhorting them, in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, to be Studious, Diligent and Faithful in the Execution of it. And that the Congregation of Christ there Assembled,

Vol. I.  bled, may also understand their Minds and Wills in those things, and that their Promise may the more move them to do their Duty, he demands them to Answer plainly to such Questions which he, in the Name of God and his Church, shall propound to them.

Where we may observe, that the first Question put to those, who were Ordain'd Priests, concerning their being mov'd by the Holy Ghost, to take that Office upon them, is now omitted; for these having been Ordain'd Deacons before, it is suppos'd, that they were then moved by the Spirit of Christ to take the Ministry of his Gospel upon them, and there is no need of any further Call from him. For being once call'd by him, though it was but to the lowest Office of his own Institution, the Church takes it for granted, that it is his Pleasure they should be promoted to any higher Office, if there be sufficient Reason and Occasion for it.

But the first Question here, is the same with the second in the Ordination of Deacons, concerning the Legality of our Orders; and the next is, whether they be perswaded, that the Holy Scriptures contain all things necessary to Salvation, and are determin'd to Instruct the People out of the said Scriptures, and to Teach

no-

nothing as requir'd. of Necessity to Salvation, but what they shall be perswaded, may be concluded and prov'd by the same. To which every one Answers, *I am so perswaded, and have so Determin'd by God's Grace.* Which shews how Necessary it is, that they who come to be Ordain'd should consider these things beforehand; for otherwise, how can they say, they have so determin'd already?

The other Questions and Answers are so fram'd, that they, who are to be Ordain'd Priests, do thereby Promise, and Oblige themselves, in the Name and by the Help of God, that they will give faithful Diligence, always to Minister the Doctrine and Sacraments, and the Discipline of Christ, as the Lord hath Commanded; and as this Church and Realm hath received the same: That they will be ready with all Diligence, to banish and drive away all erroneous and strange Doctrines, contrary to God's Word: That they will be diligent in Prayers, and in Reading the Holy Scriptures, and in such Studies that will help to the Knowledge of the same: That they will be diligent to frame and fashion themselves, and their Families, according to the Doctrine of Christ: That they will maintain and set forward, as much as lieth in them, Quietness, Peace, and Love, amongst all Christian People; and that they will reverently Obey their Ordinary and

Serm.  
III.

*Priests or Presbyters are admitted much after the same manner, except that they promise further,*

*To Administer the Word and Sacraments according to Christ's Institution; To banish all erroneous and strange Doctrines. To be diligent in Prayer, and reading the Scriptures; and To set forward Quietness, Peace and Love amongst all Christian People.*

H

other

Vol. I. other chief Ministers, unto whom is committed the Charge and Government over them. For being ask'd, whether they will do these things or no; every one answers for himself, *I will do so, by the Help of God, or the Lord being my Helper.* Which shews the extraordinary

*The great Care of the Church of England, that her Clergy be, Orthodox, Vertuous, and Faithful in the discharge of their Office.* care our Church takes, that all her Clergy may not only be Orthodox, and Vertuous, and good Men, but faithful also in the Discharge of their Duty; in that, she admits none to Holy Orders, without laying upon them the highest Obligations imaginable to be so. And they who, after all this, prove otherwise, will certainly have a very dismal account to give, when our Lord shall hold his general Visitation at the last Day.

*The Prayers of the Congregation desired for all this.* After this, the Bishop having Pray'd, that God, who had given them a Will to do all these things, would give them also Strength and Power to perform the same: He then desires the Congregation, secretly in their Prayers, to make their humble Supplication to God for all those things. For which secret Prayers, Silence is order'd to be kept for a Space.

There is something like to this in the *Greek Church*, where the Bishop, at the Ordaining of a Priest, Prays once *μυσικῶς*, secretly by himself. But here, every one in the Congregation is desired to do it, that upon so solemn an Occasion as this, all sorts of Prayer may  
be

be used, even Secret, as well as Publick, and that every one by himself, as well as all together, may lift up their Hearts to God, and humbly supplicate his Divine Majesty for all these things; that is, that he would give those, who are now to be Ordain'd, Grace to do all these things which they have now Promised.

Wherefore, when ye hear the Bishop desire you to Pray secretly, as ye would shew your Dutifulness and Obedience, not only to him, but to Christ too, in whose Name he speaks; Ye must fall down immediately upon your Knees, and in the most Humble and Earnest manner that ye can, beseech Almighty God, the Fountain of all Wisdom, Grace, and Goodness, that he would be pleased, for Christ Jesus sake, to assist those, who are now to be Ordain'd, with such Influences of his Holy Spirit, whereby they may be enabled always to Perform what they have now Promis'd; and so both save themselves and those that hear them. If ye do this Heartily and Sincerely, as you ought, it will doubtless be of very great advantage, not only to them, but to your selves too. For your Prayers will one time or other, return into your own Bosom, and procure as great a Blessing for you, as you desire for them.


Now, the whole Congregation having spent some time on their Knees in Secret

H 2

Prayer



*Manner of their*

Vol. I.  Prayer to God for his Holy Spirit, they all rise up again, and humbly confiding, that God, according to his Promise, hath heard their Prayers; they join their Forces as it were together, and with one Heart and Voice, call for the said Blessed Spirit to come down upon them, saying, or singing that Apostolical Hymn,

*Come Holy Ghost, our Souls inspire,  
And lighten with Celestial Fire, &c.*

Which done, the Bishop, with all there present, Prays again, and Praises and Worships the most high God, for these his Inestimable Benefits to Mankind, in sending his Son to be our Saviour; in appointing several Officers in the Church, to Administer the Means of Salvation to us, and in calling the Persons now present to the same.

And when this Prayer is ended, the Bishop, with the Priests present, lay their Hands severally upon the Head of every one that receiveth the Order of Priesthood, the Receivers humbly kneeling upon their Knees, and the Bishop saying,

*Consummated by the Imposition of the Hands of the Bishop.*

*Receive the Holy Ghost, for the Office and Work of a Priest in the Church of God, now committed unto thee by the Imposition of our Hands; whose Sins thou dost Forgive, they are Forgiven; and whose Sins thou dost retain,*

tain, they are retained. And be thou a faithful Dispenser of the Word of God, and of his Holy Sacraments, in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. Amen.

Serm.  
III.

Where there are several things worthy to be observed.

As first, that altho' the whole Power of Ordination be in the Bishop alone, and the Imposition of his Hands for that Purpose is sufficient to the making of a Priest, yet the Church hath thought good to Order, that the Priests which are present, shall lay on their Hands too, in Conformity, I suppose, to the Ancient Custom that hath obtain'd in the *Latin* Church. I say the *Latin*, because it was never heard of in the *Greek*, or any of the *Eastern* Churches, that any but Bishops should lay Hands upon Persons to be Ordain'd. But in the *Latin*, there is an Ancient Canon for it, or Decree of a Council, held at *Carthage*, Anno Dom. 398. which saith *Presbyter cum ordinatur, Episcopo eum benedicente, & manum super Caput ejus tenente, etiam omnes Presbyteri qui presentes sunt, manus suas juxta manus Episcopi super caput illius teneant*; when a Priest is Ordain'd, the Bishop Blessing him, and laying the Hand upon his Head, let all the Priests also that are present, hold their Hands upon his Head by the Hands of the Bishop. And from hence, I suppose it was, that our *Rubrick* was taken; in that it agrees

*For Bishops only ordain, tho' Priests if present, lay on their Hands by way of consent.*

Vol. I. so exactly with it in every particular. And the Reason of it seems to be the same with that of the fourth Canon of the Council of *Nice*; that three Bishops shall be always present at the Ordination of a Bishop. Not but that the Ordination is valid, and was always reputed so, altho' perform'd only by one Bishop, but to prevent clandestine Ordinations, to make the Work more publick and solemn, and to signalize it by the concurrent Testimony and Consent of several Persons joining together in it.

For in the next place we must observe, that altho, the Priests, if any be present, lay on their Hands also, yet it is expressly Order'd, that the Bishop shall say the words *Receive the Holy Ghost, &c.* For if a meer Priest should say them, or any one but a Bishop, the Ordination was always reckon'd null and void. For this was a judged Case in the second Council of *Sevil, Anno Dom. 619.* which, understanding that a Bishop at the Ordination of one Priest and two Deacons, laid his Hands upon them; but being troubled with Sore Eyes, so that he could not Read, a Priest Blessed them, or read the Words of Consecration; they judged the whole Action to be void, and that the Persons who should have been Ordain'd, did not receive *consecrationis titulum, sed ignominie potius elogia*; not the Title of Consecration, but

but rather a Monument of Ignominy; and therefore were not to be reputed among the Clergy. So careful was the Church in those Days, that every thing essential to Ordination, should be perform'd by the Bishop himself. And so is our Church at this time, and therefore requires that the Bishop say the Words.

And then concerning the Words themselves, I observ'd the last time, the Reason why they are the same wherewith our Lord Ordain'd his Apostles, only there are some others inserted to determine, and others added to Explain the Office that is now Conferred. And therefore I shall observe no more about them now, but that the Bishop pronounceth them, and so Confers the Order, not in his own Name, but *in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost*, whose Vicegerent he is, in Ordaining Persons to Minister to his Divine Majesty in this Sacred Office of Priesthood.

The Priests being now Ordain'd, the Bishop delivers to every one of them kneeling, the *Bible* in his Hand, not only the *New Testament*, as it was in the Ordination of Deacons, but both *Old and New*, or the whole *Bible*; and when he delivers it, he saith,

*The Bishop only gives the Bible into the Priests hand, as having Authority to appoint him his Station under Him.*

*Take thou Authority to Preach the Word of God, and to Minister the Holy Sacraments, in the Congregation where thou shalt be lawfully appointed thereunto.*

Vol. I.



So that now they have Authority, not only to Read the Gospel, but to Preach the whole Word of God, and to Minister his Holy Sacraments, with Power and Efficacy, the Holy Spirit which they have now received, being always ready at the Execution of the several parts of their Office, to make them effectual to the great Ends and Purposes for which they are appointed. But altho' they are by this means made Priests of the *Catholick Church*, and so may effectually Administer the Word and Sacraments in any part of the World; yet nevertheless, they are not to do it any where; but in the Congregation where they shall be lawfully Appointed, *i. e.* by the Bishop of the Place, who alone can lawfully do it.

Concluding  
all with  
the Commu-  
nion Ser-  
vice, as the  
most strict  
obligation  
to the per-  
formance of  
Ordination  
Vows.

When this is done, the *Nicene Creed* is sung, or said, and then the Bishop goes on in the Service of the Communion: Which all they that have receiv'd Orders, are requir'd to take together, and to remain in the same place where Hands were laid upon them, until such time as they have receiv'd the Communion, that so they may be still more strictly oblig'd, upon the very Sacrament it self, faithfully to perform what they have now Promis'd, and may receive further supplies of Grace and assistance from our Blessed Saviour to do it, by partaking of his most precious Body and Blood.

Thus

Thus I have laid before you, the Method and Design of the Offices which our Church hath Appointed for the Ordination of Priests and Deacons; that so ye may understand the Excellency of them, and be the better prepared, not to be Idle Spectators, much less Disturbers of so great a Work; but Devoutly; and Heartily to Join in the Prayers that are made for those who are Ordain'd. Now from all that hath been said upon this Subject; I shall speak a few, and but a few words, *r.* To those who come to receive Holy Orders, and then to all those who are present at it.

As for you, who are come hither, to take upon you the Office, either of Deacon, or Priest, in the Church of Christ; ye have heard, and I hope consider'd before now, the Greatness of the Office ye undertake, and the Promise ye must make before ye are admitted into it. Let me now beseech you in the Name of the Lord *Jesus Christ*, whose Servants ye are now to be, that from this Day forward, ye look upon him as your great Master; and lay out your selves wholly in the Service he calls you to. And whatsoever Difficulties ye meet with in it, follow the Apostles Example, *faint not*, nor be discouraged, but go on with Cheerfulness and Alacrity, as remembering ye serve the best Master in the World; one, who will not only stand by, and assist you, but reward you at last with a Crown of Righteousness. As

*Which  
Priests and  
Deacons  
ought to keep  
inviolate,  
not fainting  
thro' the  
Care of  
their Admi-  
nistrations.*

Vol. I.

As for the rest, I shall only say, that from what ye have heard, ye may easily see what cause ye have to thank God, that they who Administer the Means of Grace and Salvation to you, are so Regularly, so Solemnly, so Apostolically Ordained. And how great an Esteem and Reverence ye ought to have for all, who are thus Ordain'd, though not for their own sakes, yet for his sake whose Ministers they are, and whose Work they do, even our dear and ever Blessed Saviour Jesus Christ: To whom, with the Father and the Holy Ghost, be all Honour and Glory, now and for ever. *Amen.*

---

S E R-

---



---

# S E R M O N IV.

---

Salvation in the Church only,  
under such a Ministry.

---

ACTS ii. 47.

*And the Lord added to the Church  
daily such as should be saved.*

**T**H E Eternal Son of God having taken our Nature upon him, and in it, by his *One Oblation of himself* Christ's Care for the Salvation of Men, once offered, made a full, perfect, and sufficient Sacrifice, Oblation and Satisfaction for the Sins of the whole World, *He is now able to save to the uttermost all that come unto God by him, Heb. 7. 25.* But forasmuch as *He took not on him the Nature of Angels, but the Seed of Abraham, c. 2. v. 16. the Angels, which kept not their first Estate, but left their own Habitation, are all still reserved*



Vol. I. *reserved in everlasting Chains, under darkness,*  
 unto the Judgment of the Great Day. Jude 6.

And as for those who partake of that Nature, which he assumed, and in which he suffered; and so are capable of Pardon and Salvation by him, it is much to be feared, that a great, if not the greatest part of them, also will, notwithstanding what he hath done and suffered for them, perish everlastingly. Not by reason of any Defect or Insufficiency in his Merits and Power to save them, but by reason of their own Obstinacy or Negligence, in not performing those easy Conditions which he requires of them, in order to their being actually vested in that Salvation which he hath purchased for them. But whosoever, among the Sons of Men, will come up to his most gracious Terms, and submit themselves wholly to be governed and saved by him, he will take Care that they shall be certainly saved, and advanced to eternal Glory in Heaven. And for that Purpose he always so orders it in his Providence, that all such are first admitted into, and made Members of that Church, which he hath establish'd upon Earth, as the Holy Ghost here witnesseth, saying, *And the Lord added to the Church daily such as should be saved.*

*Men's neglect of so great Salvation.*

For the better understanding of which Words, we shall briefly consider.

*First,*

*under such a Ministry.*

109

Serm.  
IV.



*First*, What is here meant by the Church?  
*Secondly*, Who, by such as should be saved?  
*Thirdly*, What by the Lord's adding to the Church, daily such as should be saved?

As for the *First*, we must remember, that when our Lord was upon Earth, He said he would build himself a Church, and that upon such a Rock, *that the Gates of Hell should not prevail against it*, Matt. 16. 18. In Order whereunto, he first chose twelve Persons, called his Apostles, to whom he revealed the Design he came into the World about, and the great Mysteries of the Gospel; and then sent them out to acquaint others with what he had taught them, and to work Miracles for the Confirmation of it: And to admit all such as would receive it into their Society, by baptizing of them. By which means he soon had a considerable number of Disciples; out of which he selected seventy others, to whom he gave Power also *to preach the Gospel*, and *to work Miracles*, Luke 10. 1. And having thus laid the Foundation, he soon after purchased to himself an Universal Church, with his own most precious Blood. And, rising again the third day, he presently took care to settle the perpetual Government of it, by granting to his Apostles the like Power and Commission which he had received from his Father for that purpose. And then he gave them Orders

*The Church of Christ A Congregation of faithful People consisting of Apostolical Governours and such as hold Communion with them in the Word and Sacraments according to Christ's Institution.*

Vol. I. ders to go and preach the Gospel to all Nations, and make them his Disciples by baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, and to teach them all things that he had commanded them; assuring them withal, that he himself, by his Holy Spirit, *would be with them,* and their Successors, *to the end of the World,* Matt. 28 .19, 20.

Our Lord having thus done all things which were necessary for the Establishment of his Church upon Earth, he ascended up into Heaven, there also to take the supreme Care of it. And ten Days after, upon the Day of *Pentecost*, he, according to his Promise, sent down the Holy Ghost in a miraculous Manner upon his Apostles, to assist them in speaking the Languages of all Nations, in order to their Conversion, and to set home what they preached upon the Hearts of those who heard it: Which wrought so effectually with them, that by one short Sermon preached the same Day by St. Peter, *About three Thousands Souls received the Word gladly, and were baptized,* Acts 2. 41. And from that Day forward, many others did so. Who therefore in my Text, are said to be *added to the Church*, that is, to the Society, or Congregation of the faithful People before described; consisting of the Apostles, as the Governours of it, and of such as were joined  
to

*under such a Ministry.*


III

to them, and held Communion with them in the Word and Sacraments, which our Lord had Instituted.

Serm.  
IV.

And when the said Society was dispers'd, as it soon was, over the whole World, it was still the same, and retain'd the same Name, being still called the Church. And not only the whole, but wheresoever any part of it was settled in any City, and the Territories belonging to it; that also was called the Church of that City, as the Church of *Hierusalem*, the Church of *Corinth*, &c. And wheresoever there were several such Cities and Churches in them belonging to any Province or Country, they are called the Churches of that Country, as the Churches of *Asia*, *Macedonia*, &c. But as every private Christian is a Member of some particular Church, so is every particular Church a Member of the *Catholick* or *Universal*, which is always meant, when we read in Scripture of the Church in general, without the Addition of Place or Country. As where it is said, *That Christ also loved the Church*, Eph. 5. 25. *and Christ is the Head of the Church*, ver. 23. So here, *And the Lord added to the Church daily*,

*Such as should be Saved*, Σωζομεντες. or *True Christians only capable of Salvation.*  
such as are Saved, as the word may be render'd: But the Sense is much the same. For our Salvation plainly begins in this Life, although it be perfected only in the other. It  
commen-

Vol. I.  commenceth from our Repentance and Conversion; from our being saved from our Sins, or from *this untoward Generation*, Acts 2. ver. 40. as the Apostle in this Chapter words it. And they, and only they, who are thus saved from their Sins upon Earth, can ever attain to the Salvation of their Souls in Heaven. By such therefore as are, or should be Saved, we are to understand such as being prick'd in their Hearts, and convinc'd of their former Errors in Opinion and Practice, do heartily Repent them, and gladly receive the Word, and embrace the terms propounded in the Gospel, for the Pardon of their Sins, and for the Assistance of God's Grace and Spirit, that they may so serve him here, as to enjoy him for ever. Such as these, which shall certainly be Saved, *the Lord daily added to the Church.*

*By being in  
the Church.*

What we are to understand by that Phrase, even the Lord's *adding them to the Church*, may be easily and clearly gathered from the Context. For these doubtless were added to the Church after the same manner as the 3000 were upon the day of *Pentecost*. Now of those, it is here said, that *they were Baptized*, Acts 2. 41. Which was the way that our Lord had Instituted for the Admission of any into his Church. And then it follows in the next Verse, that *they continued stedfastly in the Apostles Doctrine,*  
*and*

*and Fellowship, and in breaking of Bread, and in Prayers, Acts 2. 42.* That is, they constantly professed to believe the Doctrine delivered by the Apostles; they held constant Communion or Fellowship with them, as became Members of that Society, whereof the Apostles and their Successors were deputed Governours by Christ himself; they frequented the Sacrament of the *Lord's Supper*, and the Publick Prayers of the Church. By which means, they were so added to the Church, as to continue in it, and neglect no Duty which was enjoyn'd, or perform'd by it. And thus, questionless it was, that *the Lord* afterwards, also *added to the Church daily such as should be saved.*

A thing much to be observ'd; especially, when the Church of Christ is so slighted and undervalued, as it is in our days. For it is plain from these words, that our Lord did not only thus *add to his Church daily such as should be Saved*; but he hath left it upon Record, that all Generations might know that he did so, and by consequence, that all which shall be Saved, must be added to the Church as they were. Forasmuch as this being the Way and Method that he hath settled in the World for the saving of Souls, or for the applying that Salvation to them, which he hath Purchased for them: We  
I have

*Christ's  
Method of  
saving men  
only in the  
Church, to  
be highly  
regarded, as  
miraculous.*

Vol. I.  


have no ground to expect that he should ever recede from it; especially, considering how strictly he himself hath observ'd it, even to a Miracle; as might easily be shewn from several Instances in the Holy Scripture. I shall mention only three, which are very remarkable.

*In the Instance of Cornelius.*

The first shall be that of *Cornelius* the Centurion, whose Prayers and Alms being gone up for a Memorial before God, God was pleas'd to send down an Angel to him. What to do? To reveal the Mysteries of the Gospel to him? To tell him what he must believe and do, that he might be Saved? No, his Commission was only to direct *Cornelius*, to send for *Peter* the Apostle of Christ, who should tell him what he ought to do, *Acts* 10. 6. And at the same time that he sent for him, *Peter* had a Vision from Heaven, whereby he was fully assur'd, that he ought to receive the said *Cornelius* into the Church; and therefore he accordingly did so. From whence we may observe, what care our Lord took, what supernatural Means he us'd, to bring *Cornelius* into his Church, in order to his saving of him.

*Of Queen Candace's Eunuch.*

The next Instance shall be that of the Eunuch, Treasurer to *Candace* Queen of the *Æthiopians*, who having been at *Hierusalem* to worship God; *The Angel of the Lord spake*

*under such a Ministry.*

115

Serm.  
IV.

*spake to Philip* to go to such a Place, *Acts* 8. 26. When he came there, he saw the Eunuch sitting in a Chariot; and the Spirit bad him go near to that Chariot; which when he had done, he heard the Eunuch read the Prophet *Isaiah*. From whence *Philip* took occasion to expound the whole Gospel to him: Insomuch, that before they parted, he was baptized, *v.* 38. and *so added to the Church*. At the same time that the Lord sent his Angel to order *Philip* to go and meet the Eunuch, he could have sent him directly to the Eunuch himself. And when the Spirit spake to *Philip* to join himself to the Chariot where the Eunuch was, he could, if he had pleased, have spoken to the Eunuch himself, and have caused him to understand the Scriptures, without the Assistance of any Man. But it seems, that our Lord having now established his Church upon Earth, as he would not send his Angel to do it, so neither would the Spirit himself undertake to direct the Eunuch how he might be saved *without the Church*; but only to bring him *into the Church*, that *so he might be saved*.

But that which is most of all to be observed in this Case, is, the Conversion of *St. Paul*; to whom, our Lord himself was pleased to appear in a miraculous Manner, and to converse familiarly with him. And

*Of S. Paul's  
Conversion.*

I 2

yet



Vol. I.



yet he himself would not make known any part of the Gospel to him; no, not so much as that he was the Christ, but only that he was *Jesus whom he persecuted*. Yea, altho' *Saul* asked him particularly, what he would have him to do? Yet our Lord would not tell him himself, but sends him to the Church to know it; *Arise, saith he, go into the City, and it shall be told thee what thou must do*, Acts 9. 6. And then he appear'd miraculously to *Ananias*, one of his Disciples in that City, and ordered him to go to *Saul*, and acquaint him with what he must do. By which Means he being fully instructed in the Gospel, was *baptized*, and so *brought into the Church*. From all which it is plain and evident, that our Lord is so resolved to *add* those who shall be *saved* to his *Church*, that he would rather work Miracles to bring Men into it, than save any without it.

*The Fathers of the Opinion that no Salvation is to be had out of Christ's Holy Catholick Church.*

Seeing therefore, that the Holy Ghost hath so positively affirmed, that the Lord added to the Church such as should be saved; and likewise hath given us such extraordinary Instances of it, it is no wonder that the Fathers so frequently assert, that there is no Salvation to be had out of Christ's Holy Catholick Church; but that whosoever would be a Member of the Church Triumphant in Heaven, must first be a Member of the Church here Militant on Earth.

*Cyprian*

under such a Ministry.

Cyprian ep. 62. ad Pompon. ep. 73. ad Juba-  
jan. Ambros. in Psal. 40. Augustin. ep. ad Do-  
na. post Coll. De Symb. ad Catech. lib 4. c. 10.

Serm.  
IV.

*Reasons  
why they  
who shall  
be saved,  
should be  
added to the  
Church.*

Now that which I principally design, in  
discoursing upon this Subject, is, to enquire  
into the Reasons of it. Not that I think it  
necessary or possible for us fully to under-  
stand that infinite Reason which our Lord  
hath for all his Actions, and in a particular  
manner for this. It is sufficient for us that  
we know, that he is both able and willing to  
save, us and that this is the way wherein he is  
pleated to do it. And therefore we, who  
can never be saved any other way but by  
him, are obliged by our own Interest to sub-  
mit to it, whether we apprehend any Reason  
for it or no. Howsoever, seeing it is a Mat-  
ter wherein the Glory of his Name, the  
Honour of his Church, and the Welfare of  
our own Souls is so highly concerned, by  
his Leave and Assistance, which I humbly  
beg his Divine Majesty to vouchsafe unto  
me, I shall present you with some such Con-  
siderations, from whence ye may conclude  
it to be both Reasonable and Necessary,  
that they who shall be saved, should be added  
to the Church.

For *First*, it is acknowledged by all Christi-  
ans, that in order to our being saved by  
Christ, it is necessary that we know and be-  
lieve his Gospel, and the Fundamental Truths  
I 3 reveal-

*Because  
without the  
Church we  
cannot  
know the  
Gospel.*

Vol. I. revealed in it. And therefore as God would have all Men to be saved, so for that Purpose, he would have them come to the *Knowledge of the Truth*, 1 Tim. 2. 4. But it is as plain also, that, as things now stand, we cannot come to the Knowledge of the Truth, but only by the Church, which is the Witness and Keeper of Holy Writ, and so, as the Apostle saith, *the Pillar and Ground of Truth*, 1 Tim. 3. 15. by which the Truth is upheld, and maintained in the World, the Gospel preserved and propagated, and so true Religion and the way of Salvation by Christ, is divulged and made known to Mankind. Inasmuch, that although I do not doubt, but that whilst the Church was confined to one Family, God, the Creatour and Preserver of all Mankind, did manifest himself in an extraordinary Manner, to some that were not of that Church. Yet now that the Partition-Wall is broken down, and the Church dispersed over the whole World; now, I say, we have no ground to expect any such extraordinary Revelations; but they that would *know the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom he hath sent*, must go to the Church for it; where they may read the Scriptures, and have them truly interpreted to them, and so fully understand what God would have them

them to believe, concerning himself and his Son. For what greater Revelations can be expected, than either by an Angel, or by the Spirit, or else by our Blessed Saviour? Yet, in the Instances before-mentioned, we see that the Angel would not instruct *Cornelius*, the Spirit would not instruct the Eunuch, our Lord himself would not instruct *Saul*, in the Articles of the Christian Faith; but they all sent them, every one his Man, *to the Church*, to be instructed by her. Wherefore seeing we cannot be saved without the Knowledge of the Gospel, nor know the Gospel, but by the Church; it is no wonder that *The Lord added to the Church daily such as shall be saved.*

Moreover, as we cannot come to the Knowledge of God's Word, but by his Church, so neither can we rightly believe what is there revealed, nor duly perform what is there commanded, without the Assistance of God's Holy Spirit, which is given by the Ministry of the Church, and shall *abide with it for ever*, as our Lord hath promised. For the Promise being made only to Christ's Disciples, *John 14. 26.* and so *to his Church*, none but such as are of that Society can receive any Benefit by it. And therefore when they who heard St. Peter's Sermon, were solicitous to know what to

*Not believe  
it aright.*

Vcl. I. do; the Apostle said to them, *Repent and be baptized, in the Name of Jesus Christ, for the Remission of Sins, and you shall receive the Gift of the Holy Ghost,* Acts 2. 38. plainly implying, that they must first be *baptized*, and so *received into the Church*, before the Holy Ghost would come upon them. There are many such Passages in the New Testament, which clearly shew, that they only which are of the Church, can partake of the Spirit which is in it; that they only who are Members of that Body, whereof Christ is Head; can be influenced and assisted by that blessed Spirit which flows from him. And this certainly is one great Reason why *the Lord addeth to the Church daily such as shall be saved.*

*Nor use the  
Gospel  
means sav-  
ingly.*

But that which I intend, by the Blessing of God, to insist chiefly upon, is taken from the Method and Means of Salvation, which are used in the Church, and no where else, as they ought to be. I know it is by Christ only that we can attain to Salvation, and that it is by the Spirit only that we can be fitted and qualified for it. But howsoever we must not, we cannot expect that he should act upon us immediately from himself, without the use of those Means which he himself hath prescribed for that End: for he would never have prescribed them, but that he designed to act

act by them. I know also that the Efficacy of the Word and Sacraments, and all the Means of Grace which he hath ordained, is not to be ascribed to themselves, but only to his Spirit moving in them, and working together with them. But howsoever, in that he makes use of those Means in his working upon us, it is necessary that we also make use of them, if we desire to be wrought upon by him: and by consequence, that we be *added to* and continue *in the Church*, if we would *be saved*; forasmuch as it is there only that we can enjoy those Means, which our Saviour hath appointed in order thereunto.

To prove this we need only consider the Means which Christ's *Holy Catholick Church* hath prescribed out of his Word, and the excellent Course she takes to train up her Children for Heaven, and fit them to converse with the Holy Angels, and with Christ himself in the other World. For he that duly considers this, will soon acknowledge, that the like is no where else to be found, but only *in the Church*.

But how shall we know what the Catholick Church hath always done in this Case? Must we read over the Councils, consult the Fathers, and search the Records of the Church in all Ages? No. We need not give our selves that Trouble: For,  
what-

Vol. I. *whatsoever Means of Grace and Salvation have been used by the Catholick Church in all Ages; the same, and none else, are to this Day used by our own. Insomuch that if we do but cast our Eye upon the Church we live in, we may in that, as in a Mirror, behold the constant Practise of the Universal Church, in all things necessary to Men's Salvation.*

*These means all found in the Church of England, and used therein after the best manner, after the Practise of the Catholick Church in all ages.*

This therefore is that which I shall now do, even briefly survey the Constitution of our Church, and consider the excellent Method observ'd in it for the bringing of Souls to Heaven. In order whereunto, I must first premise one thing in general; which is, that the Bishops and Pastors of our Church having, by successive Imposition of Hands, continued all along from the Apostles, received the same Spirit which was breathed into them; and so regularly succeeding the Apostles, and supplying now their Places in this Part of the World, hence they cannot but have the same Power and Authority which the Apostles had, to confer, by the laying on of their Hands, as they did, both the Spirit which they themselves received, and so their whole Office, upon other Bishops; and likewise so much of it as is necessary for the right Administration of the Word and Sacraments to other inferiour Officers in the Church,



Church, which we call Priests and Deacons: Of which there are so many ordained every Year by the Imposition of their Hands, that our whole Church is sufficiently supplied with them. So that there is no Parish, or particular Congregation of Christians in the whole Kingdom, but hath or may have a Priest thus ordained, and so rightly qualified for the effectual Administration of the Word and Sacraments, and other Means of Grace and Salvation among them. The Spirit which they have received, being always ready at the Execution of their several Offices, to bless and sanctify what is done by them, to the Sanctification and Salvation of those who attend upon it, and prepare themselves for it, as they ought.

But, seeing the Means of Grace thus administered by them, become effectual to the Purposes for which they are used, only by this, *viz.* the Co-operation of Christ's Spirit with them; hence all that desire or expect any real Benefit from them, must look higher than the Means themselves, trusting upon God for his Blessing upon them, and for the Assistance of his Spirit in them, according to the Promises which he hath made to that Purpose; without which we have no ground to expect they should be performed to us.

This



Vol. I.

This being premised concerning the Means of Grace in general, we shall now consider them particularly, in the same Method wherein the Catholick, or, which is all one, our Church appoints them to be used. By which we shall clearly see, what an excellent Course she takes to bring up her Children in the true Faith and Fear of God, and so to make them Heirs to the Crown of Glory. For which Purpose it is necessary that we begin at the first

*Baptism for  
Admission of  
Members  
into her  
Communi-  
on :*

Admission of them into her Communion by Baptism. Concerning which we may observe that the Errors and Iniquities of the Times and Place we live in are such, that there are many Heathens amongst us, Persons of riper Years and yet not baptized: For whose sakes therefore, our Church, to shew her Readiness to receive them upon their Repentance and Conversion, hath appointed an Office for Baptizing of them. For which there was no Occasion in this Nation for many Ages until now. But although there be many such Persons now among us absolutely consider'd, yet they are but very few in comparison of those who are baptized in their Infancy. And therefore I shall begin with those, and concern my self no further at present with the other.

*Whether A-  
dulterers,*

A Child therefore being born of Christian Parents, and by them offered to the Church to be received into her Society; the Church, in Obedience to Christ's Command, according to the Practice of the Universal Church, expresseth her Willingness to receive it. But withal, considering the Frailty and Mortality of the Parents, she requireth some other Persons, call'd Godfathers and Godmothers, to be specially present at it, as Witnesses, Proxies, and Sureties. As Witnesses, to attest upon Occasion, that this Child was baptized: As Proxies for the Child, by whom he may promise (or they in his Name) that he will perform the Conditions of the Covenant which he is now admitted into: And lastly, as Sureties to the Church, that this Child shall be brought up in the Christian Religion. So great Care doth our Church take, that all who are admitted into her Society may believe and live as becometh Christians.

*Who are presented thereto by Godfathers and Godmothers, as Witnesses, Proxies, and Sureties thereof.*

By these therefore, the Child being brought to the Church, it is there presented to the Lord, (as Christ was in the Temple) whose Minister finding it there, and understanding that it hath not yet been Baptized, puts the People in mind of the necessity of Baptism, and exhorts them to pray, that this Child may have it administered

Vol. I. nistred effectually to him. Upon which, the whole Congregation there present, join with him in supplicating the most High God, that he would Wash, and Sanctifie this Child, so that it may be Saved. Then the Minister reads to them part of the Gospel concerning the Children that were brought to Christ; draws some plain and proper Inferences from it, and gives God thanks for the same. After that, he addresseth himself to the Sureties, and acquaints them, that as Christ hath Promised to hear their Prayers for this Child which they have now brought to him; so the Child must for his part Promise, by them his Sureties, that he will Renounce the Devil and all his Works, constantly believe God's Holy Word, and Obediently keep his Commandments. Which being accordingly done, by Questions propounded by the Minister, in the Name of the Church, and Answer'd by the Sureties in the Name of the Child; the Minister prayeth, that the Child may have Grace to perform what he hath now promised. And then having ask'd by what Name, they would have the Child call'd, he poureth Water upon it, and calling it by that Name, he saith, *I baptize thee in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:* Which being the very words wherewith  
our

our Lord commanded this Sacrament should be Administred; the Child is now fully and perfectly Baptized. And to testify her Acknowledgment that it is so, the Church immediately receiveth it into her Communion, and solemnly declareth it to be now a Christian, not only by Words, but also by making a Cross upon the Child's Fore-head; the common Sign whereby Christians were always distinguished from *Jews* and *Heathens*: the Minister saying, in the Name of the Church, *we receive this Child into the Congregation of Christ's Flock, and sign it with the Sign of the Cross, &c.* After which, the Minister stirs up the People there present, to give God thanks for this Favour, and to pray unto him, that this Child may lead the rest of his Life according to this beginning. Which done, he puts the Sureties in mind of their Duty, now incumbent upon them, to see that the Child be taught, so soon as he shall be able to learn, what a solemn Vow, Promise, and Profession he hath made by them, and all other things which a Christian ought to know and believe to his Soul's Health; and then to bring it to the Bishop to be Confirm'd by him.

Serm.  
IV.



This is in short, the Substance of that excellent Office which our Church hath appointed for the publick Baptism of Infants,  
But

Vol. I. But in case of extream Necessity, lest the Child should die without it, she admitteth of *Private Baptism*, and absolutely requireth no more in the Administration of it, than what is essential to it, even that the Child be Baptized with Water, *in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.* But if it lives, she requireth that it be afterwards brought to the Church, and that whatsoever was before omitted of the publick Office, be there performed to it.

*Catechization by the Minister for the better Education of Children.*

Now, the Church having thus gotten a new Member added to her, and taken Security for its Education in the Faith of Christ; for the better performance of it, she hath drawn up a short *Catechism* for the Child to learn (when he is able) consisting of all things necessary for it to know, and nothing else. And that she may be certified, whether the Child hath learnt it or no; and likewise contribute what she can, towards his understanding all and every thing contained in the said *Catechism*, she commands that the Minister of the Parish where he lives, do frequently and openly in the Church, Examine and Instruct him in it.

By this means therefore, this new Christian, now come to Years of Discretion, understanding what his Sureties promised  
in

in his Name, when he was Baptiz'd, is by them, or some other, brought to the Bishop to be Confirm'd by him. In order whereunto, he in the Presence of God, and of the Congregation there Assembled, renews the solemn Promise and Vow which was then made in his Name, ratifying and confirming the same in his own Person, and acknowledging himself bound to believe and do all those things which his Godfathers and Godmothers then undertook for him. And that he may be enabled so to do; the Bishop, with the whole Congregation there present, jointly Pray to God, to assist and strengthen him with his Grace and Spirit. And then the Bishop, after the Example of the Holy Apostles, lays his Hand upon the Child's Head, and Prays to God for him, saying, *Defend, O Lord, this thy Child, with thy Heavenly Grace, &c.* After which the whole Congregation join again with the Bishop in some other Prayers to the same purpose. All which being duly perform'd as it ought, cannot certainly but be very effectual to the great Ends and Purposes for which it is used; as Christians in all Ages have found by their own Experience.

Serm.

IV.

*Confirmation by the Bishop for the renewing their Baptismal Vows, and strengthening them by the Benediction of God and that Holy Man.*

Our Christian being thus confirm'd, he is now look'd upon in the Eye of the Church, as no longer a Minor, but of full Age to

K

receive

Vol. I. receive and enjoy all the Blessings and Privileges which his Heavenly Father in the Holy Gospel hath settled upon him. And therefore his Spiritual Guardians, the God-fathers and Godmothers being discharged, he is now to stand upon his own Legs. And well he may, having so indulgent, pious, and wise a Mother upon Earth, as the Church is, to take care of him. For, if he be but Dutiful and Obedient to her, and follow those good Directions which she gives him, there is no fear of falling. For she considers what potent Enemies he is to Fight with, that the Flesh, the World, and the Devil, which he renounced, will all strive to recover their Possession of him; and therefore, she out of God's Word, furnisheth him with such Spiritual Armour, that if he be not failing to himself in the use of it, he may not only withstand, but conquer them all. She considers every Distemper he can be subject to; and finding suitable Remedies prescribed for it in the Holy Scriptures, she directs him how to apply them, so as to prevent, or cure it. In short, she considers the great Work he has to do, no less than to *work out his Salvation with Fear and Trembling*, that he can never do it, without the Assistance of God's Spirit, and that he hath no ground to expect any such Assistance, but in the use

*under such a Ministry.*

131

use of those Means which God hath appointed for that End; hence she often calls upon him, to use those Means, Instructs him how to do it aright, assists him in it, and so keeps him in continual Exercise and Employment, about the Work he hath to do, that he may *be Saved*.

Serm.  
IV.  
~~~~~

For in the first place, considering, that in order to the preventing those many Sins which are occasioned by the prevailing Humours of the Body, and also to the preserving his Mind in a fit temper, both to perform his Duties unto God, and to receive Divine Illuminations and Assistances from him; it is necessary to keep his Body always under. And considering likewise, that God himself hath for that very purpose commanded not only Temperance at all times, but at some times Abstinence and Fasting: Hence the Church hath set apart, some certain Days every Year, whereon her Son, we now speak of, should by Fasting, bring his Body into a constant subjection to his Soul; lest otherwise, if there were no set times appointed for it, he should be, as most are, too apt to neglect it, and never Fast at all, or at most, but very seldom, and so to no purpose.

Now the Days which she directs him to spend in Fasting, are the Forty Days of *Lent*, according to the Custom of the Ca-

*Solemn  
Fasting in  
Lent.*

K 2

*tholick*



Vol. I.  
 Rogation-  
 days.

Ember-  
 Weeks.

*tholick Church*, every Year before *Easter*; and the three *Rogation*-days, immediately preceeding *Holy-Thursday*. Besides which, he appoints Three Days, *viz. Wednesday, Friday and Saturday*, in each of the Four *Ember Weeks*, whereon to Fast, not only for the purposes aforesaid, but likewise that he may the more effectually implore a Blessing, both upon the Bishops who are to Ordain, and upon those who shall be Ordained to any Holy Function the *Sunday* following; which if he neglect to do, he must blame himself, if any unworthy Persons be then admitted into the Sacred Ministry of the Church. Whereas, if he perform his Duty aright at that time, he may upon good grounds expect a greater Blessing from the Word and Sacraments administered by those, who are then Ordain'd. Be sure his Prayers will, one time or other, return into his own Bosom; and therefore, I heartily wish, that all the devout and pious Souls in the Church, would, after the Example of Christ and his Apostles, join together in Fasting and Praying, upon so solemn Occasions as those are. What a glorious Church? What an excellent Clergy should we then have? But to return to our Christian. The *Lent-Fast* coming but once a Year, and the *Ember Weeks* but once a Quarter, for fear lest his Body should  
 in

in the mean time grow rampant, or his Passions Head-strong and Unruly, the Church orders him to Fast one Day in every Week, *viz. Friday*, the Day whereon our Lord was Crucified; as also, the Eves or Vigils of some certain *Holy Days*, the better to perform the Duties, and to Praise God for the Mercies commemorated, the Day following. And if he be Temperate in all things, and besides that, observes these prescribed by our Church, as really Days of Fasting and Abstinence, it is very much if his Body be not kept in due subjection to his Soul. But if at any time he finds it is not, he may add some more days as he finds occasion; especially, *Wednesdays*, which were also observ'd by the *Primitive Christians*; and upon which, our Church hath appointed the *Litany* to be used, as well as upon *Fridays*. And whatsoever degrees of Grace and Vertue he shall attain to, he must never think, that so long as he continues in Health, he stands in no need of Fasting: As considering, that the great Apostle himself was forc'd to *keep his Body under, and bring it into subjection, lest that by any means, when he had Preach'd unto others, he himself should be a cast-away*, 1 Cor. 9. 27.

By this means therefore our Christian, keeping his Mind continually serene, and free from any Annoyance or Disturbance

Vol. I.

from the Humours of the Body, he is always in a right disposition to receive such Impressions as are necessary to the making him a real and true Saint. Which that he may be, the Church useth all the means she can, to keep his Soul continually possessed with a deep Sense of God, and with as high Apprehensions of the great Mysteries of the Gospel, as it is capable of. For which purpose she so orders it, that every thing relating to the Publick Service, which she requires him to perform to God, as well as the Service it self, strikes an Awe and Reverence of the Divine Majesty into him, as being set apart and appropriated only to that use. Thus she appoints some certain Days, wherein to lay aside all other Business, and apply himself wholly to this. Especially she, out of God's own Word, enjoins him to keep Holy the first Day in every Week, which is therefore called the *Lord's Day*, because Devoted to his Service. Besides which, to keep the great Mysteries of the Gospel always fresh in his Mind and Memory, she prescribes him some certain Days every Year, whereon to Commemorate the *Nativity, Circumcision and Manifestation of Christ to the Gentiles, his Presentation in the Temple, his Passion, Resurrection, and Ascension, and his Mission of the Holy Ghost; the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin;*

*Keeping the  
Lord's-Day,*

*With other  
Holy-days.*

*Virgin*; with the *Lives and Deaths of the Apostles and Evangelists*, who did not only propagate the Gospel in the World, but Sealed it too with their own Blood. For the very setting apart of these and the like Days for the publick Worshipping of God, conduceth very much to his remembering and understanding the great things transacted on them; and so to his better apprehending and admiring the Power and Goodness of God discovered in them.

Serm.  
IV.



And for this reason also it is, that the *Publick Devotions*, requires him to perform his Publick Devotions to God in God's own House, a Place consecrated wholly to him and his Service. And for his better doing of it there, she appoints one of God's own Ministers, a Person set apart for that very Office, to assist him in it. And she commands this Person, at that time, to be in a different Habit from what he wears at any other time: and all to take off our Christian's Thoughts, as much as may be, from all things else, and to fix them only upon God and the great Work he is now about. The Place, the Minister, the Habit, every one putting him in mind, that he is not now about any Common or Worldly Employment; but in the special Presence of Almighty God, worshipping him, and therefore, both in Soul and Body, should carry

K 4

him-

Vol. I. himself accordingly, with Reverence and Godly Fear.

*By an edifying Liturgy,*

And then, as for the Service it self, the Church hath provided him such a *Liturgy*, wherein all things are done to his Edifying. So that he can never come to God's Houle, but, if it be not his own Fault, he may return home again Wiser and Better than he came: for he can want for nothing but he there prays for it; he can have nothing but he there gives God thanks for it; he can be ignorant of nothing, that is needful for him to know, but he is there taught it. And, lest he should at any time be seduced into Error, or tempted to Sin; lest he should grow flat in his Devotions, cool in his Charity, remiss in any Duty to God or Man, or careles of his own Eternal Good, she hath order'd the Holy Scriptures to be often Expounded, or a Sermon Preached to him; and that too, not by any one that will undertake it (for then the Remedy might prove worse than the Disease) but by one who, by Fasting and Prayer, and the Solemn Imposition of the Bishop's Hands, is Ordained to that Office; by one who hath Subscribed to all the Articles of Religion; by one who hath publicly declared his unfeigned Assent and Consent to the Use of all things contained and prescribed in the Book of Common-Prayer; by one approved of,

of, and licensed thereunto, by the Bishop of the Diocese, who, if he find just Cause for it, is empower'd and obliged to take away his Licence again, and to suspend him from the Execution of his Office. So that if our Christian lives under a Minister that doth not act according to the Rules, or doth not Preach according to the Doctrine of the Gospel, or doth not perform his Duty in every thing as he ought; it is, in a great measure, his own fault, in that he doth not acquaint the Bishop with it, whose Office it is to redress such Grievances as these are. So that if he will himself, he may be sure to have the Word of God, rightly, duly and constantly Administred to him: and not only the Word, but likewise the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, which he is required to receive as oft as possibly he can, to put him in mind of what his Saviour hath done and suffered for his Sins, and so to confirm his Faith in him, inflame his Love to him, and to dispose and qualifie him the better to converse with Christ in Heaven; to which nothing contributes more than frequent Addresses to him in this Holy Sacrament upon Earth.

*And frequer  
quent Com-  
muniions;*

Thus therefore it is, that he who holds constant Communion with our Church, is continually employ'd by her about some or other of those Means which Christ hath ordained

Vol. I. Ordained for his Salvation, and to which he hath promised the Assistance of his own Spirit. By virtue whereof, the Christian, we have hitherto discoursed of, is enabled *to deny ungodliness and worldly Lusts, and to live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present World.* But having spent some time in such holy Exercises as these are, we must suppose him at length to be seized with some Distemper, in order to his Departure into the other World. And then the Church, to shew her great care of him to the last, requires the Minister of the Parish where he lives to go and give him a solemn Visit, And that he may be sure to have the best Directions that can be given him at that great Juncture, She herself hath drawn up an Order for the *Visitation* of him, and likewise for the *Administration* of the Holy Communion to him; which is the best Cordial he can take to support his Spirits, and carry him through the great Work which he hath now to do. And when it hath pleased Almighty God, of his great Mercy, to take unto himself the Soul of this our dear Brother, the Minister, by the Order and in the Name of the Church, commits his Body to the Ground, *in sure and certain Hope of a joyful Resurrection to Eternal Life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.*

*To which the Minister Occasionally adds private Visits to the Sick;*

Thus

Thus we see how our Christian from his first Admission into the Church Militant upon Earth, is conducted and governed all along by her, until at length he is advanced to the Church Triumphant in Heaven. From whence it is easy to observe what an excellent Method she proceeds in, and what effectual Means she useth for the attaining so great an End: And by consequence, how necessary it is for all of us to be *so added to the Church*, as to continue stedfast in her Communion, and carefully to follow all her Directions, if ever we desire *to be saved*. For although I have instanced only in one single Person, we are all equally concerned in what hath been said of him. Yea, every one of us should look upon himself, as the Person spoken of all along. For I hope we are all Baptized, and so admitted into the Church, as I supposed him to be. And therefore if we do but observe these Rules, which she out of God's Holy Word hath laid before us, as I supposed him to do, there is no doubt but that we also ere long, shall be glorified Saints in Heaven.

But I am very sensible, that for all the great Care that our Church taketh of all her Children, many of them are very undutiful and disobedient to her, and so careless of their own Salvation that they do  
not



Vol. I.



*And Ex-communicates the refractory and disobedient,*

*By the Church's Ecclesiastical Discipline, according to the following Scheme. Having under one Prince, as its supream Governour upon Earth; 2 Archbishops for the 2 Provinces; 1 Bishop for each Diocese; in every Diocese one or more Archdeacons; in*

not only neglect, but despise the Means which she Administers for the Attainment of it. But what then doth she do with such as these? In short, she in great Wisdom and Prudence makes use of all the fair Means that can be thought of, for the reclaiming of them. But if that will not do, she delivers them over to *Satan*, for the Destruction of the Flesh, that the Spirit may be saved in the Day of the Lord. But seeing the Excellency of our Church appeareth in the Exercise of her Power, as much as in any thing else, it may not be amiss if we take a short View of that wise and excellent Method which she observeth in it.

*First*, therefore our Church being, by the Blessing of God, of the same extent with the Kingdom in which we live, and as so, subject to the same Prince, as its supream Governour upon Earth, for the better Management of that Power which Christ hath left with it, it is divided into two Provinces, over each of which there is an Archbishop, each Province is subdivided into several Dioceses, over every one whereof there is a Bishop: In every Diocese, there is one or more Archdeacons: Every Archdeaconry is divided into several Deanaries, and every Deanary into several Parishes. And in every Parish, as there

there is a Priest rightly Ordained for the *Administration of the Word and Sacraments*, to all the Christians that live there, so there are other Officers called *Church-Wardens*, chosen every Year, and appointed not only to look to the Fabrick of the Church belonging to the said Parish, and to provide all things necessary for the worshipping of God in it; but likewise to inspect the Lives and Actions of all the Christians that live there; to take notice of all that live in any notorious Sin, or neglect the means which God hath ordain'd for their Salvation, and to certifie and present their Names to such Officers as the Church hath appointed to consider what to do in such Cases. And although such Persons, being Christians, are obliged by their Religion, to take all the Care they can of their Neighbours Souls, and therefore to acquaint the Church with their evil and pernicious Courses, that she may interpose her Power for the reclaiming of them, yet to bind them more strictly to it, when they are admitted into that Office, they take a solemn Oath, in the Presence of Almighty God, truly and faithfully to execute the same, to the best of their Skill and Knowledge. And that none of them may be ignorant of what they are to Present, they have *Articles of Enquiry* deliver'd

*every Archdeaconry several rural Deanaries; in every Deanary several Parishes; in every Parish a Priest for the Administration of the Word and Sacraments. And Officers called Church-Wardens, Sworn to Present, by Articles of Enquiry given to them all Things and Persons Presentable*

Vol. I. deliver'd to them, wherein all and every Thing and Person Presentable, is plainly and distinctly set down.

And as this is certainly the best and surest way that the Church could ever find out, whereby to understand which of her Members either neglect those Duties which should further their Salvation, or commit such Sins as will impede and hinder it; so is the Course too that she takes for the correcting and reforming them. For as the Church-wardens are obliged to make their Presentments twice a Year, and may do it oftner if Occasion require it: So is the Bishop obliged to go about his Diocese once every three Years, that he may understand the state of the Flock committed to him, of which he must one Day give a strict Account to the great Shepherd of Souls. And lest any thing should happen in the mean time, that may require a more speedy Examination, he, according to the Custom of the Primitive and Catholick Church, hath one or more Archdeacons under him, Canonically Ordained, Authorized, and required every one to visit so much of the Diocese as is under his Jurisdiction, once a Year, or oftner if need be, to receive the foresaid Presentments, and to inspect, and what in him lies, reform all Irregularities, either in Clergy or Laity. And moreover that

*These Church-wardens are to make Presentments twice a Year, or oftner, if need require. The Bishop to Visit once in 3 Years;*

*The Arch-deacon once a Year, or oftner.*

*under such a Ministry.*

143

that the Church may never want an opportunity of being informed of any Misdemeanors that she is bound to take Cognizance of, she hath other Officers both under the Bishop and Arch-Deacon, who keep her Courts all the Year long, as occasion happens, and have Power to cite all Delinquents that are Presented, and to Examine and Try all such Ecclesiastical Causes and Matters as are brought before them.

Serm.  
IV.

*Spiritual  
Courts held  
all the Year  
long for Try-  
al of all Ec-  
clesiastical  
Matters.*

But here we must observe, that as the Church-Wardens of every Parish who Present Offenders to any of these Courts, are always Lay-men, so the Chancellors, Commissaries, Officials, and other Officers in these Courts, who receive and examine such Presentments, are ordinarily Lay-men too. And it is but reasonable, and in some Sense necessary they should be so. For if none but Clergy-men should search into the Faults of the Laity, the Laity might be apt to suspect they were too severely dealt with. Whereas being tryed by Men of their own Rank and Brotherhood before Sentence is passed upon them, they cannot blame the Church for it, nor imagine that She can have any other Design upon them, but only to do them good and make them better. Besides that, the Causes which are brought into these Courts, are many,  
and

*Mostly by  
Lay-Chan-  
cellors,  
Commissa-  
ries, Offi-  
cials, &c.*

*As the most  
wholsome  
Constitution  
upon many  
Accounts.*

Vol. I. and take up a great deal of time before they can be brought to an Issue, and therefore if Clergy-men only should be employ'd in them, it would take them off too much from the Ministry of the Word and Sacraments, which they are oblig'd by their Office continually to attend. Especially considering that the Causes are not only many, but diverse too, and some very intricate and mixt; so that to search into the bottom of them all, and fully to understand what is just and meet to be done in every one of them, requires great Knowledge and Skill in the whole Body of the Ecclesiastical Laws, and the Temporal too, so far as they any way concern the Church: Which no Man can attain to, without making it his constant Business and Study. Which not consisting with the many other Duties incumbent upon those who are Ordained to any Holy Function; the Church always found it necessary that her Bishops, and all that Exercise her Jurisdiction under them, should have some of her other Members learned in the Laws, to direct and assist them in the Administration of it, and under them to transact and try all Causes relating thereunto. Which doubtless, all things consider'd, is the best way the Church could ever think of whereby to secure her Governours from  
being

being malign'd, her Laws from being violated, and so her Members from being injured through mistake or ignorance.

Serm.  
IV.

Neither must we look upon this as any Novel Invention, but as the Sense and Practice of the Universal Church for many Ages: For we find such Ecclesiastical Officers, as those are, mentioned near 1200 Years ago by *Justinian* the Emperor, who in his Code and Novel, sometimes calls them by their *Greek Name* *Ecdicos Ecclesiæ*, or *Ecclesiecdicos*, *L. 42. C. de Episcop. & cler.* sometimes by the *Latin, Defensores Ecclesiæ*, that is, properly, Church Advocates, Ecclesiastical Lawyers, and sometimes *Episcoporum Ecclesiecdicos*, the Bishops Ecclesiastical Advocates, *L. 6. C. de his qui ad Ecclesiam confug. Novel. 56.* which he reckons amongst Lay-Officers, and yet supposeth them to be in every Church, and to take care of the Affairs of it under the Bishop; *L. 42. C. de Episc. & cler. §. 9. L. 34. C. de Episcop. Audientia, §. 5.* Before this we meet with them in the Novels of *Valentinian* the Third; *Valentin. Novel. tit. 12.* as also in the Canons of the Fourth General Council, held at *Chalcedon, A. D. 451.* which requires that Clergy-men and Monks which stay at *Constantinople* without having any Business there, should be expelled thence by the *Ecdik*, or as we say, the Chancellor of the  
L Church;

Vol. I. Church; *Chalced. Can. 23.* And elsewhere the same General Council reckons these *Ecdiks*, or Advocates, *Ibid. can. 2.* amongst those Ecclesiastical Officers which are not admitted into Holy Orders, and yet ought not to give any Money for their Places. From whence it appears that these Lay-Officers were at that time received and established in all the Provinces, and Diocesefes of the Universal Church; for otherwise this general Council consisting of above Six hundred Bishops, gathered together from all Parts of the Christian World, would never have made any Laws about them.

How long before this they were brought into the Church I shall not undertake to determine. Only this we know that the *African* Bishops assembled in Council, *A. D. 407*; *Concil. Carthag. can. 100. Edit. Oxon.* made it their request to the Emperors, *Arcadius* and *Honorius*, that they might have liberty to chuse and constitute Church-Advocates out of those who pleaded in the Civil Courts, who might manage the Affairs, and defend the Rights and Privileges of the Church there. And that this Request was readily granted, is plain from the Rescript of the said Emperors to that purpose, directed within Six Months after to the Proconsul of *Africa*, still extant in the *Theodosian Code*; *L. 38. C. T. Episcopis Eccles. & cler.*  
From

From whence it seems that those Advocates were not suffered before this time to plead for the Church in the Civil Courts of *Africa*; but it doth not follow but they might be employ'd before, both there and elsewhere in the Ecclesiastical. And it is very probable that these Offices began to be erected, if not before, at least soon after the Empire became Christian, so that the Church had free Liberty to Exercise her Power and Authority in it, and was not only allow'd to do it, but countenanced and assisted by the Secular Power. For then there was a Necessity of having such Officers, not only for the Reasons before-mentioned, but likewise, because the Emperors themselves, in Favour of the Church, put forth several Edicts and Laws concerning Ecclesiastical Persons and Matters, which being drawn up in the same Form and Manner, and intermix'd with their Civil Laws, could never be duly executed but by Persons skilled in the Imperial as well as the Ecclesiastical Laws, and in the way and manner of proceeding upon them. And therefore from that time forward it was necessary that such Advocates as had been trained up in the Civil Law, should be appointed and empowred to order and manage the Ecclesiastical Courts under the Bishop in every Diocese, that so both the Laws of the Empire that had any relation

*And of ancient Dates.*



Vol. I.

to the Church, and those which were made by the Church it self, might be duly executed in due Form and Manner, so as not to contradict, but be assistant to one another.


But at what time, and for what Reasons soever these Officers were at first brought into the Church, it is manifest, from the aforesaid Canons of the Fourth General Council, that the Universal Church had then received them: And that they have been all along continued ever since, can be doubted of by none that are Conversant in Church History. Neither can any Man yet imagine that the Universal Church for so many Ages together should agree in such a thing as this, but upon very good Grounds and Reasons. Howsoever, the general Practice of the Catholick Church is a sufficient Obligation as well as Warrant to every particular Church to observe the same as near as it can. And therefore it was that our Church at the Reformation, looking upon herself as oblig'd to hold Communion with the Catholick, as well as to separate from the *Romish* Church, retained this Ancient and General Form of keeping her Courts by Advocates Learned in the Civil and Canon Law; who are Nominated and Approved of by the Bishop in every Diocess, but  
receive

receive their Power and Authority not only from him, but from the Laws of the Church: yea, and of the State too. There being scarce any Custom or Usage (upon which the Common Law of the Land is grounded) in the whole Kingdom that can plead longer Prescription than this can.

Serm. IV.  
 Warranted by the Laws of Church and State.

But seeing these, as all other Courts in the World, may be liable to abuses and corruptions, to prevent them as much as may be, the Church in her Canons doth not only require a solemn Oath to be taken by every one that shall be admitted into any Office there; *Can. 127.* to deal uprightly and justly in the same, without respect or favour of Reward; but hath likewise provided suitable Punishments, *Can. 134.* to be inflicted upon those who shall either neglect their Duty, exceed their Commission, or do any thing unbeseeming the place they are in. And if, notwithstanding all this, any one shall be unjustly dealt with, or but think himself to be so, he may Appeal from the lower to the higher Courts, from the Arch-Deacon to the Bishop; from the Bishop to the Arch-Bishop; and from him to the Queen, who being in all Her Dominions Supreme Governour over all Persons, in all Causes, as well Ecclesiastical as Temporal, as it is necessary that She

*From which there are Appeals, even to the Sovereign, as the dernier resort, or Supreme over all Persons, and in all Causes, as well Ecclesiastical as Temporal.*

Vol. I.  should have these Ecclesiastical as well as Temporal Courts under Her, where such Causes may be Judged, so when they are brought up so high as to Herself, they must needs be finally determined, forasmuch as from Her no Appeal can be to any other Court or Person upon Earth.

*Excommu-  
nication,  
when exer-  
cised.*

Now these Courts being thus Established in the Church: When any Offender is Presented into any of them, he is cited to Appear there, which if he neglect or refuse to do, he is pronounced Contumacious, one that resisteth and contemneth the Power that Christ hath given to his Church, which for many Reasons was always judged one of the greatest Sins that a Christian can be guilty of: and therefore is proceeded against accordingly. But if he appear, his Cause is impartially searched into; and if upon due Examination he be found Innocent, he is presently discharged: but if he appears to be guilty of any notorious Crime, which the Church is bound to take notice of, she useth all means possible to bring him to a just Sense of his Sin, to a hearty Repentance for it, and to make what Satisfaction he can for the Offence that he hath given to all good Christians by it. But if all other means prove ineffectual, she casts him out of her Communion, and so from the  
the

the Society of all good Christians, according to the saying of our Lord, *If he neglect to bear the Church, let him be unto thee as an Heathen Man, and a Publican.* Mat. 18. 17.

Serm.  
IV.

But so, that if he shall afterwards repent and submit himself, the Church is always ready to receive him into her Bosom again, there to nourish, and provide all things for him that he may be saved.

*Absolution,*  
*when.*

Thus in that of our own, I have briefly run through the whole Constitution of the Catholick Church, and the several means that are used in it, and in it only, for the Salvation of Mens Souls, which whosoever seriously considers, can never wonder that they who shall *be saved*, should be *added to the Church*.

Nothing now remains but to shew what Influence the consideration of these things should have upon our Minds and Actions, which shall be soon dispatch'd. For if we recollect what hath been said upon this Subject, and lay it so together that we may take a full view of the whole method observed in the Church, for the making us Holy here, and Happy for ever, we cannot but easily see, both what Necessity there is of our being *added to the Church* in general, and what infinite cause we have to give our most humble and hearty thanks to God, both for his settling

Vol. I.  
 A Character of the Church of England, which hath all the Means of Grace in it, and Methods for Salvation.

and restoring such a Church as this is to us. A Church wherein all the means of Grace and Salvation are so duly and effectually Administred to us, that if we be not failing to our selves in the use of them, we cannot but be saved. A Church so exactly conformable to the Catholick in all things that none can separate from her without making a Schism in Christ's Mystical Body, and consequently endangering the Salvation of his own Soul. A Church so far exceeding those of *Rome*, and *Geneva*, that would either Papists or Sectaries lay aside their Prejudices, and Impartially consider what our Church is, and compare it with their own, they would need no other Arguments to persuade them to return unto her, and to live and die in constant Communion with her. A Church, to say no more, as Orthodox in its Doctrine, as regular in its Discipline, as grave and solemn in its Worship, as agreeable to Scripture Rules, as well accommodated to the whole Design of the Gospel for the bringing of Souls to Heaven, as any Church in the whole World. And that such a Church as this should be at first planted amongst us, and after it had been destroy'd by the Malice of the Devil and his Agents, should be again restored to us by the immediate hand of

of God, who can think of it without adoring the Hand that did it?

Serm.  
IV.

But we must remember to shew forth his Praise for so great a Mercy, not only with our Lips, but in our Lives; by giving up our selves wholly to his Service, according to the Rules and Orders of the Church which he hath thus graciously settled amongst us; that as we have the best of Churches, we may be likewise the best of People; and so shame our Adversaries on all sides into an hearty compliance with our Ecclesiastical Constitutions, by letting them see how far we exceed them in true Piety and Devotion; and read the Excellency of our Church in the Excellency of our Lives, who hold Communion with Her. By this means, as many, by the Blessing of God, have been lately *added to our Church*, there will be daily more and more. This also would be a most effectual way, whereby to Secure and Defend our Church against *Herese* and *Schism*, against *Popery* and *Superstition*, against *Prophaneness* and *Debauchery*, and against all those Diabolical Stratagems, and Devices, those Seditious Principles and Practices, whereby it was destroyed once, and was like to have been so again, but very lately. For if we do but live answerably to the Means that we enjoy, and serve, and please, and worship,

*An Address to all the Members of the Church of England to live as becometh those who enjoy, by the Blessing of God, such mighty advantages beyond others.*

*In Piety to God.*

Vol. I.

ship, and obey God as our Church directs us, we need not fear what Men or Devils can do against us, nor concern our selves with what may, or what may not happen hereafter; but still trust in God, who as he hath delivered us, he will yet deliver us. We have no cause to doubt of his Kindness and Favour to our Church, having had so great, so wonderful Experience of it already.

*Loyalty to  
the Queen.*

But for that end, we must be sure to live as in the true Faith and Fear of God, so also in humble Obedience, and Stedfast Loyalty to the Queen. For that is absolutely necessary, not only as a Duty in it self to God, but likewise as a Means for the supporting our Church, by strengthening the Hands of Her, whom God is pleased to make the happy Instrument of preserving it to us. And therefore I cannot but admire, with what confidence any can profess any value or kindness for the Church, and yet talk or act Seditiously against the Queen. For, that is to pretend to uphold the Church with one Hand, and to endeavour in good earnest to pluck it down with the other. Be sure, all the real Members of our Church, are as faithful Subjects to the Crown; neither can they be otherwise. Forasmuch as the Spirit which runs through the whole Body of the *Catbolick*, and by consequence

quence our Church, as I have shewn, puts them upon Universal Obedience to all the Commands of God; and to these amongst the rest, of *Honouring the King*, and being Subject and Obedient to the Higher Powers. And hence it is, that as we never heard of any Rebels in the *Primitive Church*, so neither are there, nor can be any such amongst those who are really of ours; which is the great Glory of our Church, and a clear demonstration of its Apostolical Constitution, and that, which if duly considered, would make all the Christian Princes in the World, endeavour to reform the Churches Seated in their Dominions, according to her Pattern and Example: and to protect them too, when they are so reform'd; altho' it was for nothing else, but to keep their Kingdoms quiet, and so make the Government easie to themselves: much more, if they respect their own and their Peoples Souls, that they may *be Saved*.

But that we may all be so, we must not think it enough to be admitted into the Church, and made visible Members of it. For though all that shall be *saved are added to the Church*; yet it doth not follow, that all who are *so added to the Church shall be Saved*. It is true, all such are in a state of Salvation, and in the way to it,  
but



Vol. I.



but except they continue in that state, and walk in that way, they can never attain to the End of their Faith, even the Salvation of their Souls.

Wherefore, I humbly pray and advise all that desire in good earnest to be Saved, that you would not content your selves with being Members of the Church in general; nor yet with doing only some of those things which she requireth of you; but to use all the Means, and observe the whole Method, which she out of God's Holy Word hath prescribed for that end; otherwise you will certainly deprive your selves of something that would have been very Beneficial, if not Necessary for you; as ye may easily see, if ye will but look back upon that short Scheme which I have now given you of it. As for Example, I suppose ye are all Baptiz'd, but are ye Confirm'd too? If ye be not, ye still want one of those Means which the Holy Apostles, and their Successors, in all Ages have used, whereby to obtain the Gifts and Graces of God's Holy Spirit for those who are Baptized. And suppose you are Confirm'd; Do ye also observe the several Fasts of the Church? If ye do not, it will be very difficult, if not impossible, to keep your Bodies in that due frame and temper, as that they may be fit Temples for the Holy Ghost  
to


*In Justice  
and Charity  
to their  
Neighbours  
and them-  
selves.*

to dwell in. And supposing ye Fast, do ye also pray to Almighty God, both publickly and privately? And do ye perform your publick Devotions to God, in that form, after that manner, and at such times as the Church hath appointed? Do ye harken to God's Holy Word, as Read and Expounded by her? Do ye receive the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper as oft as she is ready to give it to you? If ye neglect all, or any of these and the like means of Salvation, which are there administred, you had as good be *out of the Church as in it*, and have no more ground to expect to *be Saved*, than you have to accomplish any other end without using the Means.

Serm.  
IV.

Whereas, do but ye truly and constantly observe all and every one of those Means which our Church, as I have shewn, administred to you, and trust, and depend, as ye ought, upon the Promises of God, for the assistance and co-operation of his Holy Spirit with them; and I dare assure you in the Name, and in the Presence of my great Lord and Master *Jesus Christ*; you shall soon find them, by his Grace and Blessing, effectual to the great ends and purposes for which they are Ordain'd, even to the enlightning of your Minds, to the regulating of your Passions, to the confirming of your Faith, to the mortifying of  
your

158 *Salvation in the Church only, &c.*

Vol. I.  your Lusts, and to the making you real and true Saints, sincerely pious towards God, Loyal to our Sovereign, Just and Charitable towards all Men: By which means ye will be fitted and qualified, not only for the Pardon of your Sins, by the Blood of *Jesus*, but likewise for Heaven and Eternal Glory. So that when ye depart out of this World, ye will be admitted into the blessed Society of the Holy Angels, and the Spirits of Just Men made perfect, where you will live with God himself, and laud and magnifie his great and glorious Name, both for his continuing his Church to you, and for his *adding you to his Church*, that ye *might be Saved*, by the Merits and Mediation of our Lord and Saviour *Jesus Christ*: To whom, with the Father, and the Holy Ghost, be all Honour, and Glory, now, and for ever. *Amen.*

S E R-

---



---

# SERMON V.

---


## The true Notion of Religious Worship to be paid by Ministers.

---

JOHN xii. 20.

*And there were certain Greeks among them,  
that came up to worship at the Feast.*

**W**E are here met together at this time to do the Work, the great Work which we were all made for, even to *worship him that made us.* And therefore, it will be very seasonable to consider what that Work really is, and how it ought to be always done. For I cannot but in Charity believe that they who constantly attend the places of God's Publick Worship, do truly intend and desire to worship God there; and that their Failures in the Performance of it do generally proceed either from Ignorance or Mistake of the Way and Manner how to perform it. For it cannot be

Vol. I.  be easily imagined, that if People did rightly understand what it is to worship God, they should ever fantasie that coming to Church, and continuing there whilst another prays and preaches, is all the Worship that he that made them requires of them. And yet, to our shame be it spoken this is all that is done by most of our Congregations instead of *Worshipping God*.

*Religious  
Worship suffers  
by the  
Church of  
Rome, in  
performing  
those Acts  
to the Crea-  
ture, due  
only to the  
Creator.*

The Truth is, we have, in a great measure, lost the right manner of performing Religious Worship, in a Crowd of Disputes about the Object to which it ought to be perform'd. The *Church of Rome* hath of late degenerated so far from the Doctrine and Practice of the Primitive and Universal Church, that they who live in her Communion do commonly perform the same Acts of Religious Worship to Creatures, which they do to the great Creator of the World, *God Blessed for ever*. This we justly condemn them for, as judging it one of the greatest Sins that a Church or Person can be guilty of. But in the midst of this our just Zeal against the *Papists*, for giving as much Worship to Creatures as they do to the Creator; we must have a care of falling into the other Extream, even of giving no more Worship to our Creator, than what may be given to a Creature; which is the great Fault of too many among us.

*By too many  
Protestants  
in giving no  
more to the  
Creator,  
than what  
may be gi-  
ven to a  
Creature.*

For

For the reforming or preventing whereof, for the future, it will be necessary to lay aside all Prejudices, and consider impartially, what that is which Almighty God would have us do, when he commands us to *worship* him; or what is the true Notion of *Religious Worship*, properly so called, as it is distinguished from all other Duties which we owe to God, and is commonly expressed in Scripture by the Word *προσκύνησις*, *Adoration*, and so is always distinguished from *λατρεία*, which signifies the *serviſg of God* in general, and not only that particular Act whereby we are properly ſaid to *adore* and *worship* him.

Serm.  
V.

*Religious  
Worship, Adoration  
distinguished from  
the ſerviſg  
of God in  
general.*

This therefore is that, which by his Grace and Assistance I ſhall endeavour to do, in the Explication of the Words which I have now read; *And there were certain Greeks among them, which came up to worship at the Feaſt.*

Where by *Greeks* we are to underſtand ſuch Gentiles, who by converſing with the *Jews*, or elſe by ſome other means, had attained to the Knowledge, and embraced the *Worſhip* of the true God. Theſe are often mentioned in the *Acts* of the Holy Apoſtles, where they were called *Devout* or *Religious Greeks* and *Proſelytes*, becauſe altho they did not communicate with the *Jews* in their *Sacrifices* and *Offerings*, and other *Rites* and *Ceremonies* of the *Mosaic*

M

Law,

Vol. I. Law, yet they worshipped the same God as they did.

Of such *Greeks* or *Gentiles* as these were, it is here said, that certain of them were now among the Apostles and Disciples of Christ, and that they *came up to worship at the Feast*. Where there are three things to be observed concerning them;

- I. The *Place* whither they came, they *came up*.
- II. The *Time* when, at the *Feast*.
- III. The *Business* they came about, *to worship*. They *came up to worship at the Feast*.

*First*, the *Place*, they *came up to* was *Hierusalem*, and to the Temple there; which being then the only place upon Earth, dedicated to the Service of the most high God, by his own Appointment, it was, upon that Account, the best and highest Place upon Earth, all other Places being much inferior to it. And therefore whatsoever Country or City these *Greeks* came from, they might be truly said, as they are here, to *come up*, as to an higher Place, when they came to the Temple at *Hierusalem*.

And it is very observable, that these *Greeks* acknowledging the true God, could  
not

not but know withal, that he being every where present, they might have performed the same Worship to him in any other Place, which they did at *Hierusalem*. And yet, how far soever they dwelt off, they still came thither to do it. And the reason was, because their very going to worship *there*, was a professing their Acknowledgment of the God, which was *there* worshipped. And besides that, they knew that God, had promised to meet them, and to bless them in such Places where his Name was recorded, in a more especial manner than in any other place: in that he had said, *In all places where I record my Name, I will come unto thee, and I will bless thee, Exod. xx. 24.* From whence they could not but conclude it to be their Interest as well as Duty to go to *Hierusalem* to worship, that being the only place at that time, where God had *ricorded his Name*, and by consequence where he had appointed to come unto them, and to bless them.

Serm. V.  
 Religious Worship pay'd heretofore chiefly in the Temple at Ferusalem and why?

And certainly this Promise was never intended only for the Old Testament, or the Temple then standing; for it runs in general terms, *In all places where I record my Name.* And he must have very mean thoughts of Christ and his Gospel, who can suffer himself to be persuaded that the

For the same reasons to be pay'd to God in our Churches, as the Proper Places for it.

M 2

Name for it.



Vol. I. Name of God is not *recorded* in our Christian Churches, as well as it was in the Jewish Tabernacle or Temple. For this is to prefer the Law before the Gospel, and to make the Condition of the Jews much better than that of Christians. Forasmuch as they always had some place or other among them, where God had promised to come unto them, and so to be specially present with them, and to bless them; whereas, according to this opinion, we have none. But he that rightly considers the Nature and Design of the Gospel, must needs acknowledge, that as it excels the Law in many particulars, it comes short of it in none: much less in this which is of so great Importance. But that whatsoever it was whereby the Name of God is said to be *recorded* among the Jews, the same is in as high, if not in a much higher manner, among us at this time, and whatsoever it was that God was *specially present* in such places then, without all doubt he is so still.

*Principally  
for God's  
special pre-  
sence there.*

What it is that constitutes the *Shechinah* or *Special Presence* of God in places that are consecrated to him, and so have his Name recorded in them, it is not necessary for us to determine. I know it hath been the received Opinion of late, that it is the Attendance of the Holy Angels there that doth

doth it, and do not question but they are as certainly present in our Christian Churches, as ever they were in the Temple at *Hierusalem*. For that *St. Paul* himself assures us of. But God is not therefore said to be present in such places, because the Angels are so; but the Angels are therefore present there, because he is so in a more especial manner there than elsewhere. And the *Specialty* of his Presence seems rather to consist in those special Discoveries, which he is pleased to make of himself, and those special Blessings and Assistances, which God the Holy Ghost vouchsafeth to his People, in such Places where his Name is recorded. Hence, several of the learned Rabbins, by the *Shechinah*, understand the *Holy Ghost*. But I ground not this Opinion upon any Rabbinical Notions, but upon the Words of *St. Paul*; where he saith, *Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you, 1 Cor. 3. 16.* From whence it is evident, that it is the *Inhabitation of the Spirit*, which makes a Place, a *Temple of God*, a place of *his special Residence*. And therefore as the Spirit is said to dwell in the real Saints, because he actuates, influences, and assists them in what they do; so is he said to dwell in a Church or Temple, because he is there always ready to bestow his special Grace and

M 3

Assistance,

Vol. I. Assistance, even all manner of spiritual Blessings upon all such as come thither, rightly disposed to perform their Devotions to him. Which seems also to be the purport of the Promise it self, *in all places where I record my Name, I will come unto thee, and I will bless thee*, that is, I will so come unto thee, as to bless thee in a more especial Manner than in any other Place. And then it is no wonder that the Holy Angels, according to the general Sense of Scripture and Antiquity, are always present in such Places, to admire the Goodness of their Lord and Master to his Creatures here below, and to be ready upon all Occasions, to distribute such Blessings, as they are capable of conveying to them. As we see in the Story of the Eunuch, Treasurer to *Candace* Queen of the *Aethiopians*; who having been to worship at the Temple, an Angel was presently sent, to order *Philip* to go and meet the said Eunuch, and to bring him into the Church, that he might be saved.

But we need not trouble our selves with such nice Speculations about it. It is sufficient for our present purpose, that the Most High God, according to his own Promise, and the Sense and Experience of his Church in all Ages, is present in all such places where his Name is recorded in a more especial

special and peculiar manner than He is elsewhere. For hence it is, that pious Christians always frequented such places as were dedicated to the Service of God, and so had his Name recorded in them. Hence it was that heretofore they were so zealous and forward to erect and dedicate such places. They needed not in the Primitive times, as we do now, the Edicts of Emperours, or Acts of Parliament for the Building of Churches: their own Piety and Zeal for the Glory of God and the Salvation of Men prompted them sufficiently to it. Hence also it is, that the very setting apart and consecrating of such places for the Service and Worship of God, was always reckoned, and truly is, a very great Act of Religion, in that we thereby demonstrate our acknowledgment of his Power and Sovereignty over us, of his Love and Goodness to us, and likewise of his Right and Propriety in what we have, in that we pay him Tribute and do him Homage for it, by devoting some part of that Land or Estate that he hath given us, unto him of whom we hold the whole. Hence lastly it was, that the *Greeks* in my Text came up to *Hierusalem*, that so they might worship God in his own House, the proper place where his Publick Worship should be performed, and where nothing

Serm.  
V.  
Hence Pious Christians always frequented Churches,

Had a zeal to build them, and to consecrate them, as a very great Act of Religion:

Vol. I. else should be performed, but what hath  
 Relation thereunto. So that the same  
 Acts, which in other places may be Acts  
 only of *civil Respect* to Men, when per-  
 formed in the Church to God, they be-  
 come Acts, of *Religious Worship* unto him.

Hence no-  
 thing to be  
 done in  
 Churches,  
 but what  
 has a Rela-  
 tion to Di-  
 vine Wor-  
 ship.

Times to be  
 allowed for  
 Religious  
 Worship as  
 well as  
 Places.


The next Thing to be consider'd, is the  
*Time*, when these *Greeks* came up to  
 Worship, at the *Feast*, that is, the Pass-  
 over, as the Context sheweth; as if they  
 did not think it enough to worship God  
 at any other *place*, but they came up to  
 the *Temple* to do it *there*; so neither did  
 they think it enough to worship him at  
 any other *time*, but they came up at the  
*Feast*, to do it *then*. As knowing that  
*Time* and *Place*, though they be but Cir-  
 cumstances, they are necessary Circumstan-  
 ces of Religious Worship, and therefore ap-  
 pointed by God himself; who commands,  
 that a due Respect shall be given to both;  
*Ye shall keep my Sabbath, and reverence my  
 Sanctuary*, Levit. 19. 20. Indeed, take a-  
 way all Distinction betwixt Holy and Com-  
 mon Times and Places, and what would  
 become of Religion in the World? If  
 no *Places* were set apart where Men  
 should worship God, they would do it *no  
 where*; and, if no *Times*, they would *never  
 do it*. Hence it is that God, and under  
 him the Church, in all Ages hath taken  
 special

special Care, that as some part of the Earth which we live upon, so some part of the Time also that we live in it, should be devoted wholly to him who gives it to us. And they that would keep their Hearts always in an Holy Frame and Temper, must make Conscience of observing such *Times*, as well as *Places*, that are set apart for these Holy Purposes. As the *Greeks* here did, who came up to worship at the *Feast*.

Serm.  
V.

But that which I chiefly design to speak to, is the *Business* they came about; they came up to *Worship*. To *Worship*? what is that? Did they come to love God, to fear him, to trust on him, or the like? No surely, they did all this at home; at least they were bound to do it in all *Places*, and at all *Times*, as well as at *Hierusalem* upon the *Feast Day*. And besides, these being *Acts* purely of the *Soul*, and so confined within their own *Breasts*, none could take notice of them, but *God* and their own *Consciences*; whereas to all *Religious Worship* it is plainly necessary, that there be some *Overt Act*, whereby these inward *Motions* of the *Soul* to *God* may be discovered and represented unto others. But did they come then to hear *God's Word*? I do not doubt but they had the *Law* or *Prophets* read, and perhaps ex-  
pounded

The true  
Notion of  
Religious  
Worship.

Vol. I.  ounded to them. And so far as that was the Means whereby they learned how to worship God aright, it had some Relation to it. But the Scriptures plainly distinguish betwixt *reading* or *hearing of God's Word*, and *worshipping* of him. For it is written, that *they spent one fourth part of the Day in reading in the Book of the Law; and another fourth part in confessing and worshipping the Lord their God*, Neh. 9. 3. From whence it appears, that these were two several Duties, perform'd at several times of the Day.

But what then did they come to do? Did they come to pray, or to praise God?

*Consisting of  
Prayer and  
Thanksgiv-  
ing to Al-  
mighty God,*

Questionless they did. The Place they came to, was called the *House of Prayer*; that being the great Work it was design'd for. Neither can it be deny'd, but these are such Acts, without which it is impossible to worship God aright. But yet in the place last mention'd, although they *confessed* (under which is comprehended both Prayer and Praise) and *worshipped* both at the same time, yet these are reckon'd as two distinct Duties. And indeed, the *worshipping of God*, properly so called, doth not consist so much in these Acts themselves, as in the Way and Manner of performing them.

But

But then the Question is, how this must be done? After what manner these *Greeks* did it; and we ought to carry our selves in all our Addresses to the most High God? so as that we may be properly said to *worship him*? Which being a Question that concerns Almighty God himself, and his Worship and Honour, I shall not undertake to resolve it by my own Reason or Judgment, but shall consult his Holy Oracles, where we have many Things which singly, much more jointly considered, will fully discover his Will and Pleasure to us in this Particular. First therefore we may observe, that the Holy Ghost never useth any Word whereby to express that *Worship* which is due to God; but what signifies such humble Gestures of our Bodies before him, which may express our Awe and Fear of him. There are but two Words that I know of in all the *Hebrew* Tongue, that are used to denote the *Worship* of the True God, or are ever so translated into other Languages; and they are *קָרָא* and *שָׁחָה* whereof the first signifies, *Falling down* in general; the other, *Bowing* or *Prostrating our selves before him*; and so they are commonly translated, as well as by *worshipping*. The same may be said of the *Greek* Word *προσκύβω*, so often used in the New Testament, and particularly in  
 my

*With an  
humble  
Prostration  
of Body and  
Soul.*



Vol. I. my Text. From whence we may clearly see, what the Holy Ghost means by *worshipping God*. For how can we know his Mind better, than by the Words whereby he declareth it? But he always expresseth *the Worship of God*, by such Words as signify our *Bowing* or *Prostrating our selves* before him. And therefore we may certainly conclude, it is his Mind and Pleasure, that we should always perform our *Worship* to God by such humble Gestures as these are.

In the next place we may observe, that the most High God doth expressly forbid us to *bow down* to any Image or Idol, as in the second Commandment; *Thou shalt not make to thy self any graven Image, nor the likeness of any thing that is in Heaven above, or in the Earth beneath, or in the Waters under the Earth: Thou shalt not bow down thy self to them, nor serve them.* But why should he forbid us to do this to an Image or Idol, if it be not an essential part of that *Worship* which is due to himself? Or what can be more plain, than that he commands us to bow down to himself, in that he forbids our doing it to any thing else instead of himself? And besides, it is acknowledged by all, that he who *bows to an Idol*, is, by vertue of this Commandment, guilty of *Idolatry*, in that he worships that Idol, which

which could not be, unless *Bowing* itself be an Act of *Religious Worship* due to the true God. Serm.  
V.

Moreover we may observe, that the Holy Ghost, that we might not be mistaken in a Matter of so great Importance, doth often explain himself what he means by worshipping God: As *David* inspired by him, cries out, *Oh come, let us worship and bow down, let us kneel before the Lord our Maker*, Psal. 95. 6. Where *Bowing* and *Kneeling* are plainly added to express the several Postures to be used when we *worship*. So also, where he tells us, how the Saints of Old were wont to *worship God*.

As for Example, when *Abraham's* Servant perceived that God had prospered his Journey, it is said, *And the Man bowed down his Head, and worshipped the Lord*, Gen. 24. 26. When the Children of *Israel* understood God's Purpose to deliver them out of *Egypt*, then *they bowed their Heads and worshipped*, Exod. 4. 31. When God appeared to *Moses*, and proclaimed his Glory, it is said, *And Moses made haste and bowed his Head toward the Earth, and worshipped*, Exod. 34. 8. When *Job* had heard the several Messages that were brought him, concerning God's dealing with him, it is said, *Then Job arose and rent his Mantle, and shaved his Head, and fell down upon the Ground*  
and

Vol. I. *and worshipped*, Job 1. 20. But the Scripture is so full of such Expressions, that it would be tedious to repeat all the Places where they occur; but I cannot omit that, where it is said, *Ezra blessed the Lord, the great God, and all the People answered, Amen, Amen, with lifting up their Hands, and they bowed down their Heads, and worshipped the Lord with their Faces to the Ground*, Neh. 8. 6. From whence it is as plain as Words can make it, that this was the ancient way of worshipping God.

*Warranted  
by the New  
as well as  
Old Testa-  
ment.*

But some perhaps may say, that these Instances are only out of the Old Testament, and therefore may not concern us now. To which I answer, That most of them were before the Levitical Law was made, neither was this ever commanded in that Law which was to expire with Christ, but is grounded upon the Law of Nature, and inserted into the Body of the Moral Law, as I observed before. Howsoever, to put the Matter out of doubt, we have as pregnant Instances of it in the New Testament, as in the Old. For the Wise Men that came from the East, when they had found out our Lord, *they fell down and worshipped him*, Mat. 2. 11. When Satan had shewed our Saviour all the Kingdoms of the World, and tempted him, saying, *All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down*

## Religious Worship.

175

Serm.  
V.

down and worship me. Our Lord answered Get thee hence Satan, it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve, Matt. 4. 9, 10. Where it is manifest, that our Saviour by *Worship*, means that kind of Worship which the Devil would have had performed to him, even by *falling down before him*.

Thus it was that our Lord himself was often *worshipped*, as we read in the Holy Gospels. For S. *Matthew* saith, that a certain *Leper* came to him and *worshipped* him, Matt. 8. 2. And how he did it, St. *Mark* acquaints us, saying, that *he kneeled down to him*, Mark. 1. 40. From whence it appears, that *kneeling down* and *worshipping*, in the Sense of the Evangelists, is one and the same thing. So also St. *Matthew* again saith, that *Jairus worshipped* our Lord, Matt. 9. 18. St. *Mark* and St. *Luke* say, that *he fell down at Jesus Feet*, Mark 5. 22. Luke 8. 41.

And indeed it was after the same manner that Christ himself worshipped in the Garden. For St. *Luke* saith, that *he kneeled down and Prayed*, Luke 22. 41. St. *Matthew*, that *he fell on his Face*, Matt. 26. 39. St. *Mark*, that *he fell on the Ground and prayed*, Mark 14. 35. Which shews that he used all these several Postures in the worshipping of his Father. Nay, it is much to be observed, that

Vol. I. that the last Act that our Saviour did before his Death upon the Cross, was an Act of Worship in this Sense. For St. *John* saith, that he bowed down his Head and gave up the Ghost, John 19. 30. And seeing our Blessed Lord, both in his Life, and at the very Point of Death worshipped after this manner, it cannot be imagined but that his Apostles did so too. And therefore we find St. *Paul* kneeling at his Prayers upon the Seashore, Act. 21. 5. And St. *Stephen*, when the Stones were flying about his Ears, Act. 7. 60. Which certainly he would not have done at such a time, if it had been a mere Ceremony, and not a necessary part of Religious Worship.

Hence, when *Cornelius* supposing St. *Peter* to be more than a Man, fell down at his Feet to worship him. St. *Peter* took him up, saying, stand up, I my self also am a Man, Act. 10. 25, 26. As if he should have said, this is the Worship which is due to God, and therefore not to be performed after this manner to me, who am only a Man. So also when St. *John*, supposing the Angel that spake to him to be Christ himself, fell down at his Feet to worship him, the Angel forbade him, saying, See thou do it not, for I am thy Fellow-Servant, worship God, Apoc. 19. 10. c, 22. 9. i. e. worship God, and him only after this manner, as thou wouldst have worshipped

shipped me, even by falling down before him.

But we need no other Arguments to prove that this was the Notion which the Apostles had of Religious Worship, than the Testimony of *St. Paul*, which makes it clear and undeniable. For he, speaking of Christian Assemblies, and of Praying and Prophefying there in a known Tongue, saith, that *if one come among them and bears them prophefying in a known Tongue, the Secrets of his Heart will be made manifest, and so falling down on his Face, he will worship God*, 1 Cor. 14. 24, 25. For how was it possible for the Apostle to declare his Sense of *Religious Worship* more fully and clearly than he hath done in these Words? Which so plainly teach us, that he who would worship God aright, must fall down, or use some such Reverential Posture before him.

Having thus discovered the Mind of the Holy Ghost in Scripture, concerning the way and manner of *Worshipping God*, I might now proceed to shew, that this is not my own private Opinion, nor the judgment of our own, or any other particular Church only; but that it hath been the Sense of the *Catholick Church*, in all Places and Ages since the Apostles times, and that her Practice hath always been accordingly. But we need not appeal to the Practice of the *Church Militant*, having

N

the

Vol. I. the Example of the *Church Triumphant* it self for it. For in the Visions which Saint *John* had of what is done in Heaven, we read, that *The twenty four Elders fall down before him that sets on the Throne, and Worship him that liveth for ever, and ever, Apoc. 4. 10. And that all the Angels stood round about the Throne, and fell before the Throne on their Faces and Worshipped God, Chap. 7. 11. And so frequently elsewhere. And if those pure and spotless Creatures, the Spirits of Just Men made Perfect, and the holy Angels themselves, Worship the most High God with so much Reverence and Humility; what cause have we poor Mortals upon Earth to do so? Especially, considering, that we hope e'er long to be admitted into their Society, and to do as they do for ever. And therefore, we had need to imitate them as well as we can beforehand; that so when we come amongst them, we may not think it any new or strange thing, much less Superstition, as some do. For they who go out of this World, with their Minds possessed with an Opinion, that to Bow, or Cringe (as they prophanelly call it, in derision) before Almighty God, is Superstition, are very unfit to go to Heaven; nay, their very Consciences would not suffer them to go thither, if they might, for fear of being guilty of Superstition; if they*

*Recommended by the Church Militant and Triumphant :*

*Therefore by no means Superstitious as some prophanelly term it.*

they should conform to the Discipline and Orders of the Church that is there Established. But let them Indulge such foolish and profane Conceits, if they please, and see what will be the issue of it, at long run. Let us, who hope to go to Heaven, begin to Worship God here, as we hope to do it there for ever: even by using all such humble and awful Gestures before him, which may testify our Acknowledgement of his Presence with us, of his Greatness and Sovereignty over us, and of his Goodness and Mercy to us.

He that impartially considers the Promises, so plainly laid down in the Holy Scriptures, cannot but from thence conclude, that to the right performance of that Duty which is properly called *the Worship of God*; it is necessary that we *Bow the Head, or Knee, or whole Body, or use some such outward sign and expression of Fear and Reverence before him.* And that as such Gestures when used to a Prince, or Parent upon Earth, are a Sign of that civil Respect which is due unto them from their Subjects or Children; so the same, when done to the Creator of the World, are really Acts of that Religious Worship which is due from his Creatures to him.

But, after all, I must observe unto you, there is one thing still behind, without



Vol. I.



Spiritual  
worship  
without Bo.  
dily or ex-  
ternal, by no  
means true  
or accepta-  
ble to God.

which, all this will signifie nothing. That ye may the better understand what this is, I desire you to call to Mind our Saviour's words, *God is a Spirit, and they that worship him, must worship him in Spirit and in Truth,* Joh. 4. 24. I know these words have been produced of late, to prove that no External Worship is now required of us, and that several learned Men have taken off the Argument several ways. But, I cannot but admire, how it first came into any Man's Thoughts to imagine, that our Saviour should here condemn External Worship. He saith, indeed, that we must *worship God in the Spirit*; but doth it follow therefore, that we must not Worship him in the Body too? Did not he himself perform External Worship unto God? Did not he bow his Head, his Knees; yea, his whole Body before him, when he Prayed to him? Did not his Apostles and Disciples do so too, as I have shewed before? How then can it be imagined, that he should condemn that which he himself practised, and taught others also to do?

But it is plain, that our Saviour is so far from speaking against External Worship in these words, that he only Teacheth us how to perform it aright. *God, saith he, is a Spirit,* and therefore they that *worship him,* must not put him off, as the *Jews and Samaritans*

ritans, of whom he there speaks, were wont to do, with *Bodily worship only*, but they must *worship him in Spirit too*, and by consequence *in Truth*; that being the only *true Worship* which is thus perform'd by the whole Man, by the Body and the Spirit both, unto him that made them both. So that this seems to be the same in effect with that Expression of *David*, *In thy fear will I worship towards thy Holy Temple*, *Psal. 5. 7.* that is, I will not only bow my Head or Body, directing my self, at the same time, towards thy Holy Temple, but I will do it in the fear and dread of thy Divine Majesty; which also is implied in the very notion of *Worship*. For that being only a Sign or Expression of our Sense and Fear of God, if the Spirit be not at the same time possessed with such a sense and fear of God, there cannot be any real Sign or Expression of it; and therefore no true *Worship*. So that to our worshipping of God in *Truth*, it is absolutely necessary, that the several *Motions* of our Bodies before him, proceed from, and be attended with suitable *Motions* of the Soul and Spirit towards him.

And thus indeed it was, that Pious and Devout Persons, have been always wont to *Worship* God. I could give you many Instances of it, both in the *Old* and *New Testament*, To pass by others, I before observ'd, how *Job*, understanding God's Pleasure towards him,

N 3

fell

Serm.  
V.

Vol. I. fell down upon the Ground and worshipped before him; but did not he worship in his Soul as well as Body? Yes, surely, for as he lay thus Prostrate before God, he said, *Naked came I out of my Mothers Womb, and Naked shall I return thither, the Lord gave, and the Lord hath taken away, Blessed be the Name of the Lord, Job 1. 21.* From whence it is plain, that the Prostration of his Body before God, was attended with an equal Submission of his Spirit to him. Thus our Lord describes two Men going up to the Temple to Pray, the one a *Pharisee*, the other a *Publican*; the *Pharisee*, saith he, *stood and Prayed thus with himself, God I thank thee, that I am not as other Men, &c.* from whence we may observe, that he used no Reverence at all, but talked proudly and malapertly to Almighty God; and therefore our Saviour doth not say, that he Prayed to God but that he Prayed *with himself*, or as it is in the *Greek*, *ω̅ς̅ ε̅α̅υ̅τ̅ο̅υ̅*, he Prayed *to himself*; but he *Publican* standing afar off, and signifying thereby his Unworthiness to approach to God, *would not lift up so much as his Eyes to Heaven*, but fixing them upon the Earth, which he could not do without bowing down his Head, in this humble worshipping Posture, *He smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner, Luk. 18. 13, 14.* which shews, that as his outward Carriage before God, was

Humble

Humble and Reverent, so was his Spirit too. And therefore our Saviour saith, that *this Man went to his House Justified rather than the other*, that is, this Man's Prayer and Worship was accepted, the other's not.

Serm.  
V.

Thus also it was, that our Lord himself Worshipped God, in Spirit and in Truth, according to his own words. For at the same time that his Body lay Prostrate before his Father in the Garden, his Soul was submitting it self to him, *Father, saith he, if it be possible, let this Cup pass from me; Nevertheless, not my Will, but thine be done*, Matt. 26. 39. So he did too, when he was upon the Cross; for St. John, as I observ'd, saith, *he bowed his Head, and gave up the Ghost*, And St. Luke saith, that *he cryed with a loud Voice, saying, Father into thy Hands I commend my Spirit, and having said thus, he gave up the Ghost*, Luk. 23. 46. From whence it is evident, that at the same time that he bowed his Head, he likewise commended his Spirit into the Hands of God, and so worshipped him, both in Body and Spirit too,

Thus also it is that the glorified Saints and Angels in Heaven are represented to us as worshipping God there: For as they fall down before him, so at the same time they cry out, *Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive Glory, and Honour, and Power; for thou hast created all things, and for thy Pleasure they are and were*  
N 4
created,


Vol. I. *created*, Apoc. 4. 11. And elsewhere, having declar'd God's Goodness to his Church, in delivering Her from Her Enemies, they fell down and worshipped, saying, *Amen, Allelujah*, c. 19. 4. And this certainly is to worship God in Spirit and in Truth, when the Soul at the same time is so inflamed with Love unto him, and so full of the Sense of his Goodness and Power, that it breaks forth into Praises and Allelujahs to him.

Thus lastly it is, that the Catholick Church upon Earth hath always observed this Rule of our Blessed Saviour. But I shall instance only in the *Greek* and *Syriack* Churches. In the *Greek*, they have their ordinary *Bowings*, which they properly call *προσκυνηματα* *Worshippings*; and their Extraordinary, which they call *μελανοτας*, which are of two Sorts, the *lesser* and the *greater*; the *lesser* are, when they bow their Heads only to the Ground; the *greater*, when they lie prostrate upon it. Now, whensoever they perform any such External Worship with their Bodies, their Souls, or Spirits, are likewise employed in it. For we find in their Publick Service, that when they make their three Ordinary Bows, they often say the *τρισιδιον*, and bow at each part of it; Ἄγιος ὁ Θεός, Ἄγιος ἰσχυρός, Ἄγιος ἀθάνατος, ἐλεησὸν ἡμᾶς, *Holy God, Holy Almighty, Holy Immortal God, have Mercy upon us*. When they come first into the Chancel or Chaire, and make their three Bows  
towards

towards the East, they repeat the Words of the Publican, *God be merciful to me a sinner.* Afterwards when they Bow, they sometimes use the Words of the Psalmist, *I will love thee, O Lord my Strength, the Lord is my Support, and my Refuge.* Sometimes they say, *Lord open thou my Lips, and my Mouth shall shew forth thy Praise.* Sometimes the *Gloria Patri*; which is never said without worshipping the most Blessed Trinity, that is glorified in it. And as for the *Syriack Church*, there is a Liturgy used in *Syria, Chaldaea*, and all the Places thereabouts, which is all in the *Syriack Tongue*, except the Rubricks, which are *Arabick*; in this I find, that the Priest, when he goes to the Altar, makes his Bow, and saith, *I am come into thy House, O God, and worship before thy Throne. O King of Heaven forgive me all that I have sinned against thee,* Litur. Syr. p. 2.

Serm.  
V.

And this, as might be easily shewn, hath been the constant Practice and Custom of the Church in all Ages and Places. So that as Christians durst never, till our Days, pray to Almighty God, without either kneeling or bowing, or using some Posture of Adoration before him, so they never used any such Posture, but they still lift up their Hearts and Spirits to him. And this was always reputed the *true worshipping* of God; or, as our Saviour words it, the *worshipping of him in Spirit and in Truth.* For  
as

Vol. I.  as where the Apostle saith, that he *will sing with the Spirit, and he will sing with the Understanding also*, 1 Cor. 14. 15. and that we should *sing and make Melody in our Hearts to the Lord*, Eph. 5. 19. He doth not thereby forbid the Use of our Voices in singing (without which there cannot be properly any singing at all,) but only requires, that our Hearts should go along with them. So when our Saviour saith that we should *worship in the Spirit*; he doth not thereby forbid the using of any Bodily Gestures (without which there cannot be properly any worshipping at all) but only requires that our Spirits go along with our Bodies in the Performance of it. For as no Man can be said to Worship God at all, that doth not worship him with his Body, so no Man can be said to worship him in Truth, that doth not worship in his Spirit also.

Now these Things being thus laid down, it is easie to determine what the *Greeks* in my Text did, when *they came up to worship at the Feast*. For we cannot but suppose that they did the Work they came about, that is, they went to the Temple, the House of the most High God, and there believing and apprehending him to be, according to his Promise, specially present, they bowed their Heads, or prostrated themselves upon their Knees or Faces before him, and in this humble Posture they

they confessed their Sins, and implor'd his Mercy in the Pardon of them, and his Grace to forsake them, acknowledging him to be the Almighty Creator and Governour of the World, and that they had nothing but what they received from his Bounty and Goodness; or something to that Purpose. For this was properly to worship God, according to the true Sense of the Word, as used in Scripture, and interpreted by the Practice of the Universal Church.

Serm.

V.



Thus I have endeavour'd to explain the ancient and true Notion of *Religious Worship*; which, if seriously consider'd, would contribute very much, as to the Advancement of God's Glory, so likewise to the Settlement of his Church among us; and to the defending of it against its Adversaries on both Sides. For as for the Sectaries, who inveigh so much against these solemn Gestures prescribed by our Church to be observed in the Worship of God, they must needs be convinced of their Error, when they consider, that such Gestures are necessary to be observed in the worshipping of God, whether they were ever prescribed by any Church, or no: and that whensoever they condemn us for the using of them, they do with the same Breath condemn the Patriarchs, the Prophets, the Apostles, the Martyrs, the whole Catholick Church, both Militant and Triumphant;

*This Notion of Religious Worship rightly understood and practised would be of great use to the Church of Christ.*

*Sectaries that are against it, are against the whole Church and Christ the Head of it.*



Vol. I.



phant; yea, and Christ himself the Head of it, who used them as well as we.

And as for the Papists, from this Catholick Notion of Religious Worship, it is easie to observe, that they have little or nothing of it among them. Forasmuch as all their Publick Services being perform'd in a Language the People do not understand, whatsoever outward Gestures they use, it is impossible they should worship God together in Spirit, as they ought to do. And besides, although they often bow or kneel, it is usually to some Image or Picture, and so they worship that instead of God, directly contrary to his Commandment. I know the Learned among them pretend, that although they bow to Images, they do not intend to worship them, but God only: but they may pretend what they please, I am sure God himself doth not speak one Word of directing their Intentions one way or other, but only of bowing to Images, *Thou shalt not bow down thy self to them,* and therefore if they do that,

*Papists who bow to or before Images act against the 4th. Commandment.*

*Protestants who neglect or deride this sort of Religious Worship have little or no Religion, no sense of God upon their Minds.*

be their Intentions what they will, be sure they do that which he hath plainly forbidden.

But what doth the Apostle say *Thou that abhorrest Idols, dost thou commit Sacrilege?* Rom. 2. 22. We who abhor the worshipping of Images and Idols, shall we rob God of the Worship that is due to him? God forbid. If Bowing be no Act of Religious Worship,

ship, why do we blame others for giving it to Images? If it be, why do we not give it to Almighty God? And yet of all the Duties required in our Holy Religion, what is more commonly neglected by some, and derided by others, than this is? Which plainly shews, that for all the great Talk they make of Religion, it is but Talk; they are not in good earnest about it, nor have that Sense of God upon their Minds, which is the Ground and Foundation of it. For if they had, it would be impossible for them not to express it all the ways they can, especially, this way, which is so natural, that they who do not express their Sense of God by it, have just Cause to suspect, that they have none at all to express.

For, as for instance, we are now in the special Presence of that Supreme and All-glorious Being, which we call God, and we shall presently make our solemn Addresses again to him. Now let any one but consider who it is before whom he is, and to whom he then speaks, how pure, how holy, how great, how mighty, how infinite he is in all Perfection; and withal, let him by Faith, as it is the Evidence of Things not seen, behold and apprehend this Almighty Being, as specially present, according to his Word. Let any Man, I say, that

Vol. I. that hath any Fear of God upon his Heart but do this, and then let him forbear to manifest it in his outward Behaviour if he can: For my part, I think it to be impossible. Especially considering, that as God hath promised, that where his Name is recorded, he will come unto us and bless us: So our Blessed Saviour hath said, *Where two or three are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the midst of them*, Matt. 18. 20. From whence I cannot but believe, that he is as really in the midst of us at this time, as that we our selves are here. But is Christ, whom the Angels themselves worship, is he in the midst of us, and we not worship him? It is possible for us firmly to believe, and clearly to apprehend the Eternal God our Saviour to be here present, and yet express no Reverence or Respect to him, neither when we come into his Presence, nor when we go out of it; nor while we are in it, and hear his blessed Name mentioned to put us in mind of it? No, nor when we take the Boldness to speak unto him neither? Surely it cannot be. For such a Faith and Sense as this, would naturally operate so much upon our Minds that we could not chuse but fall upon our Knees, or bow down before him, and so worship him both in Soul and Body too.

This

## Religious Worship.

191

This therefore being the most ancient, the most proper, and as I may truly say, the most natural way of worshipping God, who can but wish it was revived and universally received among us? Of what mighty Advantage would it be, both to our selves, to the whole Church, and Kingdom also? For by this means we should effectually obtain whatsoever good Things we thus humbly desire at the Hands of God, as the Fathers have frequently observed. By this means also we should very much excite both our own and each others Affections towards God, when we meet to perform our Devotions to him. For it is *St. Augustin's* Observation, that as all such Motions of the Body, whereby we worship God, proceed from the inward Affections of our Souls to him, so those inward Affections themselves are increased by such Motions. (*Aug. de curâ pro mort. c. 5.*) And none of us but may observe the same from our own Experience, that the more humble and devout we are in worshipping God, the more are our own Affections raised, and our Souls inflamed towards him. How much more, when we see all about us, testifying their Acknowledgment of God's Greatness, Power and Sovereignty over them, in the same reverent and solemn manner that we our selves do it?

Serm.  
V.

The reviving thereof would prevail with God for the good things we pray for in Publick.

More-

Vol. I.

*would  
quash the  
Spirit of Se-  
dition and  
Profaneness  
risen up a-  
mongst us,*

Moreover this would be the most effectual way whereby to lay that Spirit of Schism and Sedition, or Profaneness and Irreligion which is gone out among us. For by this means God himself would delight to dwell amongst us, and then that wicked, that turbulent, and seditious Spirit would soon flee from us? And by this Means also Mens Minds would be so overaw'd with the Fear of God, and fortified with such strong and lively Apprehensions of him, that they could never be prevailed upon, either to leave or deride that Church, wherein they are taught and required to worship God so purely and devoutly as they are in ours.

*And secure  
our Fidelity  
to our Superiours,  
the Queen, and  
all in Authority  
under Her.*

Neither would this conduce only to the Peace and Quiet of the Church, but of the Kingdom too. For this would keep up a Sense of Religion among us: And then as Men would fear God, they would honour the Queen too. But so long as People express no Reverence to the God of Heaven, how can it be expected they should shew any to their Superiours upon Earth? And therefore it is very observable, that one of the first Steps the Devil made, in order to the disposing Mens Minds for the late horrid Rebellion, was, to take them off from bowing, or kneeling, or using any external Reverence in their Prayers to God, as well  
know-

knowing, that when that was once done, they would soon cast off all Sense of their Duty and Allegiance to the King; as we afterwards found they did by woful Experience. Whereas they who constantly worship God aright, according to the Rules and Orders of our Church, by their frequent and humble Addresses to him, have their Minds continually possessed with such an Awe and Dread of his Greatness and Power, that they dare not for their Lives oppose it in those to whom he hath committed any part of it, and so hath made them his Vicegerents upon Earth.

Serm.  
V.  
*Witness the  
ill effects of  
casting off  
External  
Reverence  
in Prayer  
to God, be-  
fore the  
late horrid  
Rebellion.*

But I must remember that we come not hither only to hear, but to do what we have now heard, that is, to worship God, and that we are to do it now at his Holy Table: Wherefore that I may detain you no longer from it, I shall say no more, but only add, that could we be all persuaded constantly to perform this great Duty, with that Humility and Submission, both of Mind and Body that we ought, as we should always live in the true Fear of God, while we are upon Earth. So we should be always ready and prepared to go to Heaven, where we hope to do that to all Eternity, which we have now been speaking of, even worship and adore the Almighty Creator of the World, in and  
O through

Vol. I. through his Son our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, to whom with the Father, and the Holy Spirit, be all Honour and Worship given of us, and of all the Creatures in Heaven and Earth, from this time forth for evermore. *Amen.*

---

---

S E R-

---



---

# S E R M O N VI.

---

A Form of sound Words to  
be used by Ministers.

---

2 TIM. i. 13.

*Hold fast the Form of sound Words  
which thou hast heard of me,  
in Faith and Love, which is in  
Christ Jesus.*

**A**lthough we are apt to wonder most at such things as seldom happen in the World, yet certainly the most common and obvious things that be, if duly consider'd, deserve as much, if not much more, to be admired by us. What more common to all Mankind, and yet what more strange and wonderful, than that by certain Sounds in the Air, or by certain Characters upon solid Bodies, we should be

Common and obvious things as much the Acts of Admiration as those that seldom happen.

O 2

able



Vol. I.

able to discover what one another thinks. Thoughts we know are the immanent Acts of the Soul, a Spiritual Being, and so not capable of any external Representations. And yet for all that; we can make such Sounds and Figures, utter such Words, and write such Letters, from whence other Persons may understand what we think as well as we our selves. And this indeed is the Foundation of all humane Society and Conversation. For by this means we can communicate our Hopes and Fears, our Joys and Grievs, our Desires and Abhorrences, all our Sentiments and Notions to one another. Yea, by this means we can converse with the Ancients, and know what they thought, that lived above a Thousand years ago. Of so great use are words, whether spoken or written, to Mankind.

*Words the  
Images of  
thoughts  
and founda-  
tion of Com-  
merce.*

And yet as nothing may be more easily, so nothing hath been more grossly abused than they. For though we can frame Ideas and Notions of things in our Minds, without any relation unto or dependence upon words, yet having been all along accustomed to express our Thoughts by them, we are apt to be more intent upon Words, than we are upon Things themselves; and so to accommodate and suit our Notions to Words, rather than Words unto our Notions. So that whatsoever Words we commonly use, whereby to express such or such Things, our Apprehensions

sions of these things are according to the Words whereby we are wont to express them. If they be false, our Apprehensions being regulated by them, cannot possibly be true; and if they be true and rightly understood by us, our Apprehensions cannot possibly be false; being bound up, as it were, and confined within the Sense and Meaning of such Words. But it being very hard and difficult to find out fit and proper Words in any Language, whereby fully and distinctly to express the Nature of Things, and our own Idea's of them, most Men to save themselves the labour of a further Search, take up with the first they meet with, especially if they be but generally receiv'd; which if they happen to be false, as they frequently are, they infallibly lead them into false Conceptions, and erroneous Opinions of the things themselves. And therefore it cannot but highly concern us all, to be very cautious and wary in the Choice of our Words, especially in Divinity, where every Mistake is Dangerous and many Damnable.

*Words that are not the Images of Notions carefully to be avoided, especially in Divinity.*

This therefore being a Matter of so great importance, much greater than it is commonly thought of, it may justly challenge to be the Subject of our present Discourse. For which end I have chosen these words of St. Paul to Timothy, *Hold fast the Form of sound Words which thou hast heard of*

Vol. I. *me, in Faith and Love, which is in Christ  
Jesus.*

Where we may observe Three Things:

A Form of  
sound  
Words  
given by St.  
Paul to Ti-  
mothy Bi-  
shop of the  
Proconfu-  
lar Asia.

*First*, That some time before the Writing of this Epistle, St. Paul had given to Timothy a form of sound Words, though not in Writing, yet by word of Mouth. This is plain, in that he saith, *A Form of sound Words, which thou hast heard of me.* Timothy was now Ordained Bishop of Ephesus, the Metropolis of all Asia Proconsularis, whither the Apostle sent him to preach and propagate the Gospel; and that he might rightly understand the Principles of that Religion, which he was to preach, and cause others to do so too, the Apostle puts words into his Mouth. such as would clearly and properly express the great Truths, which he was mostly to insist upon, which he therefore calls *ὑγιαίνοντες λόγους*, *sound Words*, such as would make his Hearers to be *Sane mentis*, Men of sound Judgment and right Notions in the Mysteries of Religion. And whosoever doth not consent to those *sound* and wholesome Words, the same Apostle elsewhere saith, *That such a one is a Fool, knowing nothing, ἀλλὰ νοσῶν*, but he is sick, as the word signifies, or as our Translation hath

hath it, he dotes about Questions and strifes of Words, 1 Tim. 6. 4. As if a Malignant Fever had affected his Brain, distracted his Mind, and made him delirious, so as to rave and talk Nonsense. For so all do that use any other than right and proper Words in the Mysteries of our Religion, whatsoever they say is Nonsense, if not downright Blasphemy. Hence it is that the Apostle so often makes mention of *sound Doctrine*, in opposition to the extravagant and corrupt Opinions, which false Teachers, even in those Days, instilled into the Minds of their Ignorant and unwary Disciples. And lest *Timothy*, thro' any mistake or inadvertency, should fall himself, or lead others into the same Errors, *St. Paul*, before he sent him to preach the Gospel, furnished him with such a Form of *sound Words*, which if he did but constantly observe, he could neither be deceived nor deceive.

Secondly, We may observe that this Form of *sound Words* was both in *Faith and Love, which is in Christ Jesus*: that is both concerning the Doctrine and the Discipline, what we are to believe, and what to do, in Obedience to the Gospel of Christ. For as Faith comprehends the one, so doth Love the other. And *St. Paul* had given *Timothy* a Form of *sound Words*

Concerning  
Doctrines  
and Disci-  
pline.

Vol. I. *Words* in both. But, first in Faith, and then in Love; because it is Faith that works by Love; and he that doth not rightly believe, can never truly obey the Gospel of Christ as he ought to do. But in one, as well as the other, St. Paul instructed *Timothy* how to express himself, and by that means hath admonished us also to be very careful how to speak, what words we use, whether in Theoretical or Practical Divinity, concerning either Faith or Manners.

To be ever  
used in the  
Explicati-  
on of Di-  
vine  
Truths re-  
vealed in  
the Gospel.

Lastly, St. Paul did not think it enough, to give *Timothy* a Form of *sound Words*, but he chargeth him to hold it fast, to keep it, to use no other words, but such as exactly agreed with those which he had taught him. The Greek words are υποτύπωσις ἔχει τῶν ὑγαίνοντων λόγων, where the word υποτύπωσις is variously rendred by Interpreters. I shall not trouble you with any critical Observations about it. But only observe in general, that it is sometimes used for a Pattern or Example, 1 *Tim.* 1. 16. sometimes for a short Description, or Delineation, or Summary, or Compendium. Thus *Clemens Alexandrinus* wrote a Book, which he called, υποτυπώσις, which *Photius* saith, was a brief Exposition of the *Old and New Testament*; out of which the Ἐπιστομαὶ ἐκ τῶν Θεοδότης at the end of his works,

works, I suppose were taken. And in this Sense, the word here used, intimates, as if *St. Paul* had given *Timothy*, if not that which we call the *Apostles Creed*, yet some such like *Form of sound Words*, containing the Sum and Substance of what he was to Believe and Preach.

But the Apostle lays no great stress upon that word. For it follows, hold fast the *Form of sound Words*, *ὡν παρ' ἐμῆ ἰκυσσας*, *ὡν* not *ἡς*, *which Words*, not *which Form* thou hast heard of me. So that it is not so much the *Form*, as the *Words* themselves, which the Apostle would have him to hold fast, to have them continually in his Mind, and in his Mouth too, whensoever he speaks of those Divine Truths, which are revealed to us in the Gospel.

What these *sound Words* were which *Timothy* heard of *St. Paul*, we know not : But this we know, that it doth as much concern us to use *sound Words* in matters of Divinity, as it did him. And therefore having not heard them at *St. Paul's* own Mouth, as he did, it may not be amiss, if we consider of the most certain way to find them out, that we may consider how to express our selves in all the Articles of our Christian Faith, by such words as the Apostle here calls *sound* and *wholsome*, such as will give us and those we speak to, occasion to frame  
right

We are to use the same sound Words in expressing the Articles of our Faith, as the Apostle commanded Timothy to do.

Vol. I. right Notions and Conceptions of those things which belong to our Everlasting Peace.

Scriptural  
Words the  
best Prefer-  
vative a-  
gainst He-  
refie or  
Schifm.

For this End therefore, I shall in the first place lay down this as a most certain and undeniable Truth, that the Scriptures, as being indited by the Spirit of God, in the Languages wherein they were first written, do contain the best and soundest Words that possibly could be Invented, whereby to exprefs such Truths, as are necessary for Mankind to believe or know. For they being design'd on purpose to be the Rule, both of our Faith and Manners, and contriv'd for that end, by infinite Wisdom and Goodness it self; it cannot be imagined, but that every thing is there exprefs'd, in the most plain and perspicuous, the most fit and proper, the most full and significant Words, that could be desired of Almighty God, whereby to discover Himself and his Will to our capacities; To which of his infinite Mercy, he is pleased to condescend, in all these Books which are acknowledged by all Christians to be written by Men inspired, moved, assisted and directed in what they wrote, by the Spirit of God himself. By which means, the whole Scripture is indeed, but as one continued *Form of sound Words*; which if we do but *Hold fast* and understand aright

aright, we can neither fall, either into *Herese* or *Schism*. And whatsoever words we use in the Mysteries of our Religion, are either true or false, sound or corrupt, as they do, or do not agree whith those which are used in that Holy Writ.

Serm.

VI.



But in the next place, we must consider withal, that notwithstanding the extraordinary clearness and propriety of Speech, whereby Divine Truths are there revealed to us, yet there never was any *Error*, *Herese* or *Schism* in the Church, but what was pretended by the Authors and Abettors of it, to be grounded upon Scripture. In this all *Hereticks* *Greek* and *Latin*, Old and New agree. They all plead Scripture for what they say; and each one pretends that his Opinion, be it never so absurd and ridiculous, is consonant to the words there used. Which though it may seem strange at first sight; we shall not much wonder at, if we do but consider three things.

*Yet Hereticks, Schismatics &c. always pretend Scripture on their side and why?*

*First*, that most Men, not understanding the Original Languages, read and consult the Scriptures no otherwise than in some Translation, which they notwithstanding, look upon as the Word of God; and if there be any word in that Translation, that favours any Erroneous Opinion, they presently conclude, that the Scriptures

do

*Because they converse not with the Original Texts but Translations only.*



Vol. I. do so too, tho' they be as much against it, as that Translation is for it. As for Example, in the first Promulgation of the Gospel to Mankind, Gen. 3. 15. God said to the Serpent that beguiled our first Parents, *And I will put enmity between thee and the Woman, and between thy seed and her seed* וְאִנְיָוּתָא בֵּינְךָ וּבֵין אִשְׁתְּךָ, הוּא יִשְׂוֹרֶהָ, *It, that is the Seed of the Woman, which is Christ, shall bruise thy Head, and thou shalt bruise his Heel*; as our Translation rightly expounds it. But the vulgar *Latin* renders it, *Ipsa conteret caput tuum*, as if a Woman should do it; which the *Papists* interpreting of the *Virgin Mary*, ascribe to her this great Victory, and Triumph over Sin and Satan; and are taught to say in their Addresses to her, *Adoro & benedico sanctissimos pedes tuos, quibus antiqui serpentis caput calcasti*. There are many other absurd Opinions as well as Practices in that Church, which this one word hath been the Occasion of.

Thus, where the Apostle speaking of Marriage, saith, τὸ μυστήριον τῆςτο μέγα ἐστίν, the vulgar *Latin* again translates it, *Sacramentum hoc magnum est*. From whence they conclude Matrimony to be a Sacrament, such a one as Baptism, and the Lord's Supper.

So the Anabaptists. Thus, also immediately before his Ascension, our Blessed Lord said to his Apostles,

stles, Πορευθέντες ἐν μαθητεύσει πάντα τὰ  
 ἔθνη, βαπτίζοντες αὐτοὺς, which the vulgar  
 Latin renders, *Euntes ergo docete omnes  
 gentes, baptizantes eos.* Which most of our  
 Modern *European* Versions follow. And  
 from hence I verily believe the Error of  
 the Anabaptists, and Antipedobaptists took  
 its first Rise. For apprehending our Sa-  
 viour to say according to this Translati-  
 on, *Go ye and teach all Nations, and then  
 baptize them:* They presently inferr'd, that  
 Persons ought first to be taught, and then  
 baptized: And by Consequence, that Chil-  
 dren being not capable of the former,  
 cannot be so of the latter. But if they  
 had understood and consulted the Orig-  
 inal, they would have found no such thing.  
 For μαθητεύω never signifies to Teach, but  
 only to make a Disciple. And so the *Sy-  
 riack* and other Oriental Translations, con-  
 stantly render the Word. And therefore  
 it is observable, that in all the Eastern  
 Churches, this Heresie was never heard  
 of, nor any where else, but only in such  
 places where the vulgar *Latin* prevail'd;  
 which plainly shews that it was grounded  
 at first, only upon that false Translation  
 of the Word μαθητεύσατε, by *Docete.* Tho'  
 afterwards they endeavour'd to prove it  
 from other places of Scripture, either tran-  
 slated, or at least falsely understood, as this  
 is,

 Sermon.  
 VI.

Vol. I. is. Many Instances of this Nature might be produced to shew how false Translations of the Scriptures have given the first Occasion to draw such Opinions from them, which are directly contrary to what is asserted in them. And when Men have once espoused an Opinion, whether it be true or false, they look upon themselves as obliged to maintain it.

*Or, are not acquainted with the Jewish History, Context or Scope of the Sacred Oracles, thro' Ignorance or Sloth;*

*Secondly*, Although there be many, especially of late Years, who are able to read and understand much of the Original Text, yet they also are to seek for the true meaning of many Places. For besides the ἀπαξ λεβόμενα, many other Words and Phrases frequently occur, which cannot be fully understood, except we first know the Rites and Customs of the Jewish Church, consider the Context and Scope of the places where such Words are used, compare one place with another, and observe many other Rules requisite to the right Interpretation of those Holy Oracles: which most Men, by reason of their Ignorance and Sloth, are either unable, or unwilling to do. And therefore are apt to take up with the first Sense that offers itself, without giving themselves the trouble of a farther Search.

Thus *Clemens Alexandrinus* observes of the Hereticks in his Days, that they would quote

quote Scripture indeed, but not in the Sense which the Context required, but would take here and there a Word, and apply it to their own private Opinions, not considering what is signified by it, ἀλλ' αὐτῆ ψιλῆ ἀποχρώμενοι τῇ λέξει, but abusing the naked Word itself, by putting what Sense they please upon it. The same may be observed of many in our Days, who getting a Scripture Word by the end, away they run with it, and never leave it, till they have forced some Erroneous Opinion or other from it; which therefore cannot be imputed to any Obscurity or Uncertainty in the Scriptures themselves, but to the Darkness of Mens Minds, and the Perverseness of their Wills, that they either cannot, or Will not take the pains to understand what is clearly revealed in them. And to this Head most of the Ancient and Modern Heresies may be referred.

*So most of the Ancient and Modern Hereticks.*

*Lastly,* Although some do understand the Words whereby it hath pleased Almighty God to reveal himself and his Pleasure to us; yet the Things themselves signified by those Words, are many of them so High, Mysterious and Divine, that their finite and corrupt Apprehensions are not able to reach them. And therefore disdain to believe what they cannot comprehend,

*Or understand not the things signified by Scriptural Words and therefore Rejett them as too High and Mysterious and Divine.*

Vol. I. not comprehend, they detort those Words from their True and proper, to such a Sense as will suit with their Understandings. Seeing they cannot apprehend so much as the Words signifie, they will make the Words signifie no more than they can apprehend.

This St. Peter observed in his Days; where speaking of St. Paul he saith, *As also in all his Epistles, speaking in them of those things, in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other Scriptures, to their own Destruction,* 2 Pet. 3. 16. Where he plainly speaks, not of the Words, but Things themselves; for it is not *ἐν αἰς*, in which Epistles, but *ἐν οἷς* amongst which things in those Epistles, there are *δυσνόητά τινα*, some things hard to be understood.

*These Mysteries are as plainly revealed as things of that Nature can be.*

Such are those great Mysteries of the most Blessed Trinity, the Divinity, and Incarnation of the Son of God, and the like; which are as plainly revealed in Scripture, as things of that Nature could be; and yet many have had the Impudence to deny them, only upon that Account; because their Reasons forsooth were not able to comprehend them. These are they who Lucifer-like aspire to be like God himself, *who would measure the*  
*Water*

Serm.  
VI.

*Water in the hollow of their Hands, and meet out the Heavens with a Span, who would comprehend the Dust of the Earth in a Measure, weigh the Mountains in Scales, and the Hills in a Balance.* Nay, which is worse, they would measure Heaven by Earth; Eternity by Time, God by themselves; and believe nothing of his Infinite, Eternal, Incomprehensible Essence, but what they can comprehend within the narrow compass of their own Reason, altho' God himself hath been pleased to affirm it.

As if the Testimony of God was not a stronger Ground whereupon to build our most holy Faith, than Humane Reason? Which certainly hath nothing else to do in such Mysteries; but to search into the Truth of the Divine Revelation, which being either supposed or proved, we have all the Reason in the World to believe what is so revealed, whether we understand it or no. But these great Masters of Reason, have so little of that which they so much pretend to, as not to believe this.


*Men are blameable for rejecting them, as if the Testimony of God was not greater than that of Humane Reason.*

And therefore to make the Scriptures to speak nothing but what they can comprehend, that is, nothing but what themselves please, they rack every Word, Particle, and Sentence, transpose the Comma's, alter the Accents, violate all the Rules of true Construction, and then it is no wonder

*Therefore Hereticks pervert the Scriptures and blaspheme God in his own Words, because all Revelation must stoop to their level.*

P

der

Vol. I.  der, if they force the Scriptures to say, not what God, but what themselves would have them. And by this means it is, that the most pernicious and blasphemous of all Heresies were first broached, which whosoever swallow down are certain to be poisoned and undone for ever.

Hence therefore we may observe, how that although the Scriptures contain none but *sound* and *wholesome* Words, such as *Timothy* heard of *St. Paul*; yet such is the Weakness of Men's Understandings, such the Corruption of their Judgments, such the Perverseness of their Wills, the Disorder of their Affections, and the Pravity of their whole Souls, that they extract Poison from that which was intended for their Food, draw Error out of Truth, Heresie out of the Scriptures themselves, so as to learn to blaspheme God in his own Words. But what then shall we do in this Case? How can we be ever certain that the *Words* we use in Matters of Religion be *sound*, and by consequence our Opinions orthodox, and our Sentiments of God and those eternal Truths which he hath revealed to us, such as he himself would have them? Why surely for this End it is necessary, that we indulge not our own Fancies, nor idolize our own private Opinions, but *hold fast the Form of sound Words* delivered to us  
in

Holding fast the form of sound Words found in the Scripture, and that in the Sense which the Catholick Church has used them, the best Prefervative against Error, Heresie, Schism, &c.

in the Holy Scriptures, in that Sense which the Catholick Church in all Ages hath put upon them.

Serm.

VI.



For the eternal Son of God having with his own Blood, purchased to himself an Universal Church, we cannot doubt but that he takes sure Care of it, that, according to his Promise, *the Gates of Hell shall never prevail against it.* For which end, He, the Head of this Mystical Body, doth not only defend and protect it by his Almighty Power, but he so acts, guides, directs and governs it by his Holy Spirit, that though *Errors* and *Heresies* may sometimes disease and trouble some parts of it, yet they can never infect the whole; but that is still kept sound and entire, notwithstanding all the Power and Malice of Men or Devils against it. So that, if we consider the Universal Church or Congregation of faithful People, as in all Ages dispersed over the whole World; we may easily conclude, that the greatest Part, from which the whole must be denominated, was always in the right, which the ancient Fathers were so fully perswaded of, that although the *Kαθολικὸς* properly signifies Universal, yet they commonly used it in the same Sense as we do the Word *Orthodox*, as opposed to an Heretick, calling an *Orthodox* Man a *Catholick*, that is, a Son of the



Vol. I. *Catholick Church*: As taking it for granted, that they, and only they, which constantly adhere to the Doctrine of the *Catholick* or Universal Church, are truly *Orthodox*; which they could not do, unless they had believed the *Catholick Church* to be so. And besides that, it is part of our very Creed, that the *Catholick Church* is *Holy*, which she could not be, except free from *Heresy*, as directly opposite to true Holiness.

He therefore that would be sure not to fall into damnable Errors, must be sure also to continue firm and stedfast, to the Doctrine of the Universal Church, as being grounded upon the Scriptures rightly understood: For so every thing is, that she hath taught us. For the *Catholick Church* never undertook as the Romish hath done, to coin any new Doctrines of her own Head. No, She always took the Scriptures for the only Standard of Truth; and hath accordingly delivered her Sense of them, in such Words as she judged to agree exactly with those which are there used.

*The Catholick Church never determin'd Truths, till denied; nor interpreted Scripture, till first perverted.*

And therefore it is observable, that the Church never undertook publicly to determine any Truth, until it was first denied; nor to interpret the Scriptures, until they were first perverted. If no Hereticks had ever risen up in the Church, the Church had

had never held any General Councils. And if the Scripture Words and Phrases had not been first abused, and wrested to a wrong and contrary Sense to what they were intended, she had never invented other Words to explain them. But when the Enemy had sown Tares in the Lord's Field, the Church could not but endeavour to root them out, or at least to keep them from spreading any further. When wicked Men had offered Violence to the Word of God, his Spouse could do no less than defend it, and declare the true Sense and Meaning of it to her Children.

As for Example, that great Fundamental Article of our Christian Faith, upon which, not only our Religion, but our eternal Salvation depends; the *Divinity* of our *Blessed Saviour*, is so plainly, so fully, so frequently asserted in holy Writ, that the Church did for many Years together believe, acknowledge and preach it, only in *Scripture Words*, and needed not as yet any other Words, whereby to express it. But when it was once denied, and the Scripture Words so far abused, as that a quite contrary Sense was extorted from them, then it was time for the Catholic Church to appear in its Behalf: And being accordingly assembled in a General Council at *Nice*, She there determined that the

*Instances,*  
*The Divinity of our Saviour who was not declared*  
*εμωστος*  
*by the Council of Nice*  
*till Hereticks deny-*  
*ed him so to*  
*be, and they*  
*found him so*  
*in Scripture,*  
*tho' not in*  
*express*  
*Words, yet in*  
*Substance.*

Vol. I. Son is *ὁμοούσιος τῷ πατρὶ*, of the same Substance or Essence with the Father: Which Words she then used only for the clearer Explication of the several Places in Scripture, where the Divinity of Christ is asserted. For *Athanasius*, who was present at the Council, saith, that the Fathers gathering the Sense of the Scriptures concerning our Saviour, *εἰρήκασιν τὸ ὁμοούσιον*, pronounced him to be *ὁμοούσιος*. And therefore, though the Word was not in Scripture, they intended no more by it, than what was there expressed in other Words.

I know that the *Arrians* complained that the Word *εἰσία* was no where to be found in Holy Writ. But though that *Greek* Word be not, yet certainly there is no Word in all the *Greek* Language that more exactly answers to the most proper Name, of God *יהוה* than *εἰσία* doth. And indeed the Word *Κύριος*, which the Apostles use, and whereby the *Septuagint* Translate *יהוה*, is much of the same signification in its Original; from the old Word *Κύρω*, the same with *εἶμι* and *εὑάρχω*. And besides that, the Council of *Nice* did not invent this Word, but it had been used in the Church all along before. For *Athanasius* saith, That some Bishops both of *Rome* and *Alexandria* had used it 150 Years before that time. And that *Eusebius Casariensis*

*ensis* himself acknowledged as much, and upon that Account afterwards subscribed to the Council. Who those Ancient Bishops were, we know not, their Works being now lost. But *Tertullian*, who lived about 105 Years before that time, in his Apology, saith, That the Son is called God *ex unitate Substantia*, and in his Book against *Praxeas*, that the Three Persons are One God *per Substantia unitatem*, which perfectly agrees with the Greek Word *ὁμοουσιον*. And seeing they that lived so very near to the Apostles used this Word, it is more than probable that they also were not the first Inventers of it, but that they had received it from the Apostles themselves.

Serm.  
VI.

Howsoever, this is certain, that in the Writings both of the Apostles and Prophets, we frequently meet with the Truth it self, which is signify'd by this Word, which having been confirmed by the Council of *Nice*, it hath been constantly used by the Universal Church as the true and full Interpretation of the Holy Scripture concerning the Divinity of our Blessed Saviour; And so generally received by all Christians of all Ages, that after the *Arrians* were once silenced, it never met with any considerable Opponents in the World, but *Mahomet* and *Socinus* with  
P 4 their

Vol. I. their Followers, which deserve not the  
 Name of Christians.

The Motherhood of the Virgin Mary who was not pronounced *Θεοτόκος* till Nestorius had affirmed there were Two Persons as well as Two Natures in Christ.

The same may be observed of the Third General Council held at *Ephesus*: For when *Nestorius* had affirm'd, that in Christ, as there are two Natures, so there are two Persons likewise, one Person as he was God begotten of the Father; the other as Man, born of his Mother; and therefore that the Blessed Virgin could not properly be called *Θεοτόκος*. The Council, for the Determination of this Question, did not only consult the several Texts in Scripture relating to our blessed Saviour, but considered likewise in what Sense those places had been understood by the Catholick Church before that time; for which end they caused the *Nicene Creed*, and several Passages out of *St. Cyprian*, *St. Basil*, *Athanasius*, *Gregory Nazianzen*, and many others to be read in Council. And from thence they gathered, and therefore pronounced, that according to the Scriptures, as interpreted by the Catholick Church, Christ, though he have two Natures, yet he is but One Person, and by consequence that the Virgin *Mary* might properly be called *Θεοτόκος*, because the same Person who was born of her, is truly God as well as Man, which being once determined by an Universal Council to be  
 the

the true sense and meaning of the Scriptures in this Point, hath been acknowledged by the Universal Church ever since, till this time.

Serm.  
VI.

I might instance in other General Councils, wherein the same way and method of proceeding was religiously observed. For they never took upon them to form new Articles of Faith, but only to explain and establish the old Ones; which being delivered in Scripture, were believed all along by the Catholick Church before that time. And certainly whatsoever hath been thus approved by general Councils, and received and taught by the universal Church in all Ages, we have all the reason in the World to believe it to be the true Doctrine of the Gospel, every way corresponding with what is delivered in the Scriptures, though it be not *totidem verbis* contained in them. Be sure no sober Man, but must acknowledge, it is more possible for himself, yea, and for any particular Church to Err, than it is for the Universal Church to do so. And therefore it must needs be the safest way to use Scripture Words in such a Sense which the Universal Church hath always put upon them, and by consequence such Words also, whereby the Universal Church hath always expressed her Sense of God's Mind

*The Catho-  
lick Church  
not so liable  
to err as  
particular  
Christians.*

Vol. I. Mind as revealed to us in Scripture, and to look upon them all as *sound Words*, such as St. Paul here speaks of, such as will convey right and sound Notions of the Divine Mysteries to our Understandings.

*The Church of England most agreeable to the Sentiments of the Catholick Church in Doctrine and Discipline.*

I have insisted the longer upon this, both because it is so necessary to our being *sound* in the Faith, and also because of the great use that may be made of it in defending our Church against its Adversaries on all sides. For our Church, as to its Doctrine as well as Discipline, is settled upon so firm a Basis, so truly Catholick, that none can oppose what she Teacheth, without denying not only the Scriptures, but the Scriptures as Interpreted by the universal Church. So that we may justly Challenge all the World to shew us any one Point or Article of Faith, wherein our Church differs from the Catholick in all Ages, since the Apostles Days. Which I think is more than can be said of any other National Church in the whole World. There being no other, that I know of, that keeps to the Form of *sound Words* delivered in Scripture as interpreted by the universal Church so firmly and constantly as ours doth.

Not to trouble you at present with any other. There is the Church of *Rome* that pretends

pretends herself to be the only Catholick Church in the World, Examine but the Words that she hath taken up of late, the great Words whereby she distinguisheth herself from all other Churches, and you will find that they agree neither with Scripture nor Antiquity, much less with both as all sound Words do. What those Words are which she insists so much upon, is easy to be found out, for we have a Form of them prescribed and published by Pope Pius IV. in the Acts of the Council of Trent, and inserted into their Canon Law; a Form of Words that every one is bound to Swear to, before he can be admitted into any Degree in their Universities, into any Benefice, Dignity or Preferment in their Church, or indeed into any publick Employment whatsoever. As appears by the Bull of the said Pope to that purpose. But in this whole Form of words, except the *Nicene Creed*, with which it begins, to make the rest go down the better, there is scarce any one Word which can properly be called sound, in the Sense that I have now explained. There is *Transubstantiatio*, *Purgatorium*, and several such Novel words, which many of the Papists themselves have acknowledged can never be proved from Scripture. And if so, I am sure they are not consonant to the

Serm. VI.

The Church of Rome deviates grievously from Scripture and Antiquity in the points of

Transubstantiation, Purgatory.



Vol. I. the Doctrine of the Universal Church. For she never proposed any thing as necessary to be believed, but what she could prove from Scripture.

It is not worth our Labour to run over the whole Form. But give me leave to single out one Paragraph, because of its relation to the Conspiracy which was yesterday prevented, and we prais'd God for our Deliverance from it. The Words are these, *Sanctam Catholicam & Apostolicam Romanam Ecclesiam, omnium Ecclesiarum matrem & magistram agnosco: Romanoque Pontifici, Sancti Petri Apostolorum principis Successori, ac Jesu Christi vicario, veram obedientiam spondeo ac juro.* An excellent Form of Words truly, for a Man to swear to directly contrary both to the Scriptures and the Catholick Church. The Church of Rome, as now established, a Catholick and Apostolick Church; The Mother and the Mistres of all other Churches: But that is nothing in comparison of what follows; The Bishop of Rome, Successor to St. Peter, and the Vicar of Christ.

And if you would know in what Sense he is the Vicar of Christ, their Authors commonly tell you, that he is so *Christ's Vicar* upon Earth, that Christ and he are but one and the same Head of the Church,  
and

and so every Creature is as much bound to be subject to the Pope, as to Christ himself. And therefore *Antonius Puccius* in a Speech he made in the Lateran Council to Pope *Leo X.* there present; was neither affraid, nor asham'd to use these Words to him, *Quasi in te, uno, vero, & legitimo Christi & Dei vicario, propheticum illud debuerit rursus impleri; Adorabunt eum omnes reges terræ, omnes gentes fervient ei.* So horribly hath this one Word or Title given to the Pope been abused by them. It hath indeed been the Occasion, not only of their Pride and Ambition, but likewise of all the Villanies, Persecutions, and Assassinations that have been executed or attempted by them. For the constant Use of this Word having imprinted in their Minds a Fancy, that the Bishop of *Rome* sits there in Christ's stead, to manage and order the Affairs of the whole World, whatsoever he commands, be it never so wicked and impious, never so cruel and barbarous, they look upon it as sacred, and reckon themselves obliged to obey it, as much, yea much more than what Christ himself hath commanded.

But, if after all you ask them what right he hath to this Name, how he comes to be Christ's Vicar upon Earth, more than any other Bishop? Their Answer is, Because he

Serm.  
VI.

Which last word has been abused to the most horrid purposes;

Tho' there's no ground, as above-said, for the Pope's Supremacy in Scripture; nor Reason.

Vol. I. he is St. Peter's Successor. And therefore to make out this Title, it is necessary for them to prove two Things: *First*, That St. Peter himself was made Christ's Vicar more than any other Apostle; and then, that the Bishop of Rome succeeds him in that Office. As for the first, they quote those Words of our Lord to Peter, *Thou art Peter, and upon this Rock I will build my Church*, Matt. 16. 18. But it is plain, that the Catholick Church never understood those Words in any such Sense, as if Peter was by them constituted the Vicar of Christ. And besides, it is plain also, that although we should understand the Words of St. Peter's Person, yet there is nothing at all conferred upon him by them. For our Lord speaks not in the Present, but only in the Future Tense, and so doth not grant him any thing as yet, but only promiseth to give him something hereafter. *Upon this Rock*, saith he, *I will build my Church, and I will give thee the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven*. And therefore to understand these Words aright, we must consider when, and how this Promise was fulfill'd. And that we shall find to have been after the Resurrection of Christ, when he said to his Apostles, *As my Father sent me, so send I you*. And when he had said this, he breathed on them and said, *Receive ye the Holy Ghost, whose*  
*soever*

Not in  
 Scripture;

to be used by Ministers.

223

soever sins ye remit, they are remitted to them, and whose soever sins ye retain they are retained,

Serm.  
VI.

Joh. 20. 21, 22, 23. Now was that Promise fulfilled: Now were the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven given to St. Peter, but not to him only, but to the rest of the Apostles with him; so that if St. Peter was then made the Vicar of Christ, so were all the other Apostles as well as he. And by consequence all other Bishops as well as he of Rome.

But after all this, suppose St. Peter was the chief of all the Apostles: suppose our Saviour did design him some peculiar Honour, by saying, *upon this Rock I will build my Church*: What is all this to the Pope of Rome? How comes he to be so much concern'd in any thing that was said, or done to Peter? It is no where Recorded in the Gospel, that our Saviour ever so much as mentioned the City of Rome, much less the Bishop of that City, which certainly it was very necessary he should have done; had he designed him for his perpetual Vicar to the end of the World. He that pretends to so high an Honour and Dignity as this is, had need have something more to show for it, than the Bishop of Rome hath, who hath so little, that it was a Thousand Years after Christ, before this Title was given

Nor Reason

Vol. I. given to him. For as I remember, Saint Bernard was the first that ever called him *κατ' ἐξοχὴν*, the Vicar of Christ, and therefore, it is far from being the Sense of the Catholick Church.

*Therefore more grievous is the abuse in doing unconceivable Mischiefs in the World by it.*

But since this Word hath been used, and this Title hath been given to the Bishop of Rome; what Mischief hath it done in the World? For he conceiting himself to represent Christ's Person upon Earth, and to be Invested with all his Power and Authority, at length began to look upon himself as something more than a Man; at least, far above all Mortals upon Earth; and therefore hath taken upon him to depose Kings, to absolve their Subjects from their Allegiance, and to persecute, murder, assassinate all sorts of Persons that he is pleased to call Hereticks. And all this under the pretence of Religion, and Authority derived from Christ himself, as being his Vicar upon Earth.

Oh Blessed Jesu! that ever thy Sacred Name should be thus abused, by the Sons of Men! That ever any one should dare to pretend Power from thee, to destroy those whom thou camest to Save with thine own Blood! What shall we say unto thee, Oh thou Redeemer of Men? We blush and are ashamed of our selves, that  
ever

ever any of our Nature which thou wast pleased to assume, should be so injurious to thee? How long, oh Lord, Holy and True; dost thou not Judge and Avenge thy self on all those who thus continually Blaspheme thy Great and All-glorious Name, and use it to Palliate their most Atrocious Crimes, and Barbarous Enormities? *Abate their Pride, assuage their Malice, and confound their Devices,* that thy Name may be no longer dishonoured, thy Gospel perverted, nor thy Holy Catholick Church oppressed by them!

I have taken the boldness to make this short Address to our Lord and Master Christ, as being confident, that he, according to his Promise, is *present with us,* and will in his good time, grant what we have desired of him. In the mean while, we must learn Obedience and Submission to his Divine Will; and above all things, take care to keep within the Bounds that he hath set us, and to continue sound Members of that Mystical Body, whereof he is Head. For which end, we must be sure to observe this Apostolical Rule, to *bold fast the Form of sound Words;* which his Apostle judged so necessary, that he minds *Timothy* of it, not only here, but likewise in his former Epistle to him, saying, *1 Tim. 6. 20. O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy*  
Q Charge;

Vol. I. Charge; that is, the *fides depositum*, as St. Hierome expounds it, that sound Faith which is committed to thee; and then he adds, avoiding τὰς βεβήλας κενωφανίας, profane and vain Babblings, as contrary to the sound Words before spoken of; or, as the Latin Fathers generally render it, *Devitaris profanas vocum novitates*: Reading, I suppose *Κανωφανίας*, instead of *κενωφανίας*: But the Sense is much the same. For all new ways of speaking in Divinity, especially in our Age, is at the best but vain Babbling, and commonly Prophane, possessing Men's Minds with such Notions and Conceptions of things, as will infallibly lead them into Error and Herese. Read but the wild extravagant Opinions of the first Hereticks and Schismaticks, that disturbed the Church; and afterwards take a view of those which after Ages have produc'd; together with such as have been either Reviv'd or Invented in our Days, and you will find them all made up of new Words, strange Phrases, and odd Expressions, which please the Ears, and then debauch the Minds of them which hearken to them. We need not go far for Instances; every Sect amongst us, will supply us with too many, insomuch, that they may be all known from one another, meerly by their Words, and new Modes of speaking; whereby they would seem

New-fangled Words dangerous in Theological affairs.

Used only by Hereticks and Schismaticks

seem to *Interpret*, when indeed they *Pervert*, the Scriptures, and *wrest them to their own Destruction*.

Serm.  
VI.



Hence therefore, it will be our Interest and Wisdom, as it is our Duty, to avoid those *new-Words* and Phrases, which have been lately started in the Church, as well as the Opinions which are Couch'd under them; and to look upon them at the best, but superfluous and unnecessary, upon that very account, because they are new. For nothing certainly can be necessary, to be believed, or spoken in our Days, which hath not been so all along.

To be avoided by the Orthodox.

Especially, it concerns us, who are to Instruct others in the way of Bliss, to use none but *sound Words*, such as are consonant to the Scriptures, as Interpreted by the Catholick Church in all Ages. I speak not this of my self; it is the express Command of our Church, in the Canons she put forth in the Year 1571. where she hath these Words, *In primis verò videbunt concionatores, ne quid unquam doceant pro concione, quod à populo religiosè teneri & credi velint, nisi quod consentaneum sit doctrinæ veteris aut novi Testamenti, quodque ex illà ipsà Doctrinà Catholici Patres, & Veteres Episcopi. collegerint.* So wisely hath our Church provided against Novelties; inso-much, that had this one Rule been duly

Especially the Clergy.

Q 2

obser-



Vol. I. observ'd as it ought, there would have been no such thing as *Hereſie* or *Schiſm* amongſt us. But we ſhould all have continued firm both to the Doctrine and Diſcipline of the Univerſal Church. And ſo ſhould have *held faſt the Form of ſound Words*, according to the Apoſtle's Council in my Text, in the Senſe I have now Explained it; which therefore, that we may for the future do, I ſhall conclude my preſent Diſcourſe with this brief Exhortation.

*Men, Brethren, and Fathers.*

*The Church of England exemplifi'd, as conform to the Primitive, Apoſtolic, Catholick Church of Chriſt.*

Give me leave to ſpeak freely to you, of the Church you live in. A Church, not only in its Doctrine and Diſcipline, but in all things elſe exactly conformable to the *Primitive*, the *Apoſtolic*, the *Catholick Church*. For, was that no ſooner Planted by Chriſt, but it was watered by the Blood of Martyrs? So was ours. Did the Primitive Chriſtians ſuffer Martyrdom from *Rome*? So did our firſt Reformers. Hath the Catholick Church been all along peſtered with *Hereticks* and *Schiſmaticks*? So hath ours. Have they endeavour'd in all Ages to Undermine, and ſo to Overthrow her? In this alſo, ours is but too much like unto her. And it is no wonder: For the ſame Reason that occaſioned all the Diſturbances and Oppoſitions that the Catho-

Catholick Church ever met with, still holds good, as to ours too: Even because its Doctrine is so pure, its Discipline so severe, its Worship so solemn, and all its Rules and Constitutions so holy, perfect and divine, that Mankind, being generally debauched in their Principles and Practices, have a natural Averseness from it, if not an Antipathy against it. They would willingly go to Heaven, but are loth to be at so much Pains for it, as our Church, out of the Word of God, prescribes. And therefore would fain perswade themselves, that many of her Prescriptions are either sinful or superfluous; because not suiting forsooth with their Humour, Interest, or depraved Inclinations. But all their little Objections against her, are grounded either upon their Ignorance of what she prescribes, or else upon their Unwillingness to perform it. There are very few, either of the *Papists* or *Sectaries*, that know what our Church is, and therefore all their *Zeal* against it, must needs be *without Knowledge*. And they that have some general Notions of it, would never set themselves in good earnest upon the Observance of what she commands; and therefore cannot know what Advantage it would be to them.

*Hath no Enemies or false friends but such as are Ignorant or Impudent*

Q 3

Where-

Vol. I.



Whereas, let any one that hath a due Sense of Religion, and a real Desire of Happiness, let such a one make Tryal of our Church but for one Year; let him constantly read the Scriptures, in the Method that she prescribes; let him constantly use the Common-Prayer, according to her Directions; let him constantly observe all her Fasts, and Holy Days; let him receive the Sacrament as often as she is ready to Administer it, and perform whatsoever else she hath been pleased to command; let any Man, I say, do this, and then let him be against our Church, if he can. I am confident he cannot. But our Misery is, that none of those who are out of our Church, and but few of those that are in it, will make the Experiment. And that is the Reason that those are so violent against her, and these so indifferent for her.

*Hence the former are violent against her, the later moderate on her behalf.*

But let others do what they please, and answer for themselves as well as they can another Day. As for you who are here at this time, in the especial Presence of God, I humbly beseech and exhort you in the Name of our Lord and Master Jesus Christ, that as he hath been pleased to admit you into so holy and pure a Church, so you would all endeavour to live up to the Rules and Orders of it, as many here present do.

First,

First, Keep close to the Words she uses in her Articles and Common Prayers. By this Means you will have a right Judgment in all things, and *hold fast the Form of sound Words* indeed. By this means you will be secure from Heresie, and entertain no Doctrines but what is Catholick and Orthodox. By this means whatsoever happens you will still be stedfast in the Faith of Christ, and not suffer your selves to be imposed upon by the Adversaries of our Church on either Side. For if they cannot fasten *new Words* upon you, it will be impossible for them ever to deceive you.

But then you must remember to conform to the Discipline, as well as to the Doctrine of our Church, not hypocritically, indifferently and partially, but sincerely, constantly, universally, so as to observe and do whatsoever she commands, either in her Liturgy, Canons or Constitutions. By this Means you will live as the Primitive Fathers did, and come short of none of the most eminent Christians that ever lived since the Apostles times. By this you will shame the Adversaries of our Church into a Compliance with her, when they see how far you out-strip them in all true Grace and Virtue. Yea, by this means you will be really Saints on Earth, and glorified Saints

Serm.  
VI.

*The Members of our Church to live up to its Rules and Orders, Doctrine and Discipline,*

*As they hope for Salvation*

Q 4

in

**Vol. I.** in Heaven. For be but you as Pious towards God, as Loyal to our Queen, as Sober in your selves, as Faithful to your Friends, as Loving to your Enemies, as Charitable to the Poor, as Just to All, as our Church enjoins you: In a word, be but you as conformable to her, as she is to the Catholick Church in all Things, and my Life, my Eternal Life for yours, you cannot but be Happy for evermore. Which God of his infinite mercy grant we may all be, in and through our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, to whom, &c.

*The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the Love of God, and the Fellowship of the Holy Ghost, &c.*

---

S E R.

---



---

# S E R M O N VII.

---

Christ's Church establish'd on  
a Rock.

---

M A T T. XVI. 18.

*And I say also unto thee, that thou  
art Peter, and upon this rock  
I will build my Church.*

**A**Lthough the Son of God hath with  
his own most precious Blood pur-  
chased pardon and Salvation for  
us, yet we have no ground or rea-  
son to expect that we shall ever be actually  
possessed of it, unless we use those means  
which he himself hath prescribed and ap-  
pointed in order thereunto. Which being  
duly and effectually administered only in  
the Church, which he for that purpose hath  
*established upon Earth, he therefore addeth to  
the Church daily such as shall be saved.* And that  
Man;

*Communion  
with  
Christ's  
Church esta-  
blish'd upon  
Earth to be  
held by  
those who  
will be  
saved.*

Vol. I. Mankind may never want an opportunity of obtaining eternal Salvation by him, he always did and ever will take care that his said Church, wherein they may obtain it, be upheld and preserved in the World, notwithstanding all the opposition that Men or Devils can make against it: Which being a matter of so great importance and comfort to us all, our Saviour did not think it enough to acquaint his *Apostles* with it when he was upon Earth, but he hath left it upon Record, that we and all Generations may always have it from his own Mouth, and so be fully assured of it, in these Words. *And I say also unto thee, thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my Church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.*

God takes  
Care of that  
Church.

The Pope of  
Rome's  
Supremacy  
not founded  
on this  
Scripture,

In speaking to which Words, I might First take notice how horribly they have been abused, and wrested so far that they have been brought in as an Evidence for that absolute and unlimited Power, or rather Tyranny which the *Bishop of Rome* pretends to, not only over all his Brethren, the *Bishops* and *Pastors* of the Church, but likewise over all the Sovereign *Princes* and *Emperours* of the World! But if he hath no better Title to the *Bishoprick of Rome*, than he hath to such an *Universal Bishoprick* and *Monarchy* over all the World from these Words, the See is certainly void, and the

the Conclave may chuse another into it when they please. For what if our Lord said to *Simon, thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my Church?* What's all this to the *Pope of Rome?* How comes he to be so much concerned in these Words, wherein there is not the least mention, nor intimation either of *Rome* itself, or the *Pope* there, much less of any such *Universal Authority* granted to him? Certainly he that lays claim to such an extraordinary Power, as derived to him from Christ, (far greater than Christ himself would ever exercise upon Earth) had need to have more to shew for it, than these, or any other, words in the holy Gospel will afford him.

But this being a Cause wherein the *Bishop of Rome* hath been so often cast and baffled already, and we having so little reason to fear that it will ever be tryed over again either in this or any other *reformed Church*, now that Princes are grown wiser than to give away their Crowns and subject themselves to a Foreign Power upon such groundless pretences, I shall say no more at present to it, but only mind you in general of the proper meaning of the Words.

Our Lord having asked his *Apostles, whom Men thought him to be*, he then propounded the same Question to them saying,  
*But*

*Nor his Universal Tyranny to be feared any more;*



Vol. I. *But whom sayye that I am? To which Peter in the name of the rest Answers, Thou art Christ the Son of the living God. Upon which our Lord having pronounced him blessed for being enabled to give so true and sound an Answer to so great a Question, he adds, And I also say unto thee, thou art Peter, a Rock (as the Word signifies) and upon this rock I will build my Church, that is, thou shalt be one of those upon whom I will build my Church like an house upon a rock, that shall never be moved.*

*For the Church of Christ, is like a House built upon a Rock;*

He that looks upon these Words with a single eye, may easily discern this to be the natural sense and meaning of them. Especially if he reads them by that light which St. Paul hath given them, where he tells the *Ephesians*, that they, and so the whole Church, were *built upon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone*; Eph. 2. 20. for it is plain from hence that the Church was *built upon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets*: but it is plain also that *Peter* was one of the *Apostles*, and therefore that it was built upon him as well as upon the other *Apostles*. But then it was built upon the other also as well as upon him: For *St. Paul*, who perfectly understood our Lord's meaning, asserts

## Establish'd on a Rock.

237

Serm.  
VII.

serts it of the *Apostles* in general, not only of *St. Peter* in particular. And although our Saviour in my Text directs his Discourse to *St. Peter* in particular, because he had spoke to him in the Name of all the rest, yet he doth not thereby exclude the *other Apostles*, but rather includes them all in him. So that as he had spoken the sense of all the rest to Christ, so all the rest were equally concerned in what Christ then spoke to him. As appears also from what our Lord saith further to him in the Words following my Text. *I will give thee the keys of the Kingdom of heaven, and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.* Where we may observe that our Lord speaks, as in my Text, not in the present but future Tense, and so doth not give *St. Peter* the keys now, but promiseth to give them hereafter to him. *I will* saith he, *give thee the keys of the Kingdom of heaven.* But that this promise though spoken only to *St. Peter*, yet was meant for all the other *Apostles* as well as for him, is plain and undeniable, it was fulfilled to all the rest as well as to him. For it was not fulfilled till after Christ's resurrection, when he breathed on his *Apostles*, and said, *Receive ye the Holy Ghost, whosesoever*

*Founded on  
the Apostles  
and Pro-  
phets.*

Vol. I. *ever sins ye remit, they are remitted, and whosesoever sins ye retain, they are retained.*

Joh. 20. 22, 23. Now were the keys, according to the forsaide promise, given to St. Peter but not to *him only*; but to the rest of the *Apostles* with him. Whereby our Lord himself hath fully demonstrated, that the Promise which he here made to St. Peter was intended by him for all *his Apostles* as well as for *him*; and by consequence that this part of it likewise was so, where he saith, *thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my Church.*

And then it follows, *And the gates of Hell, shall not prevail against it.* Which Words containing matter very proper for the occasion; by his assistance who spake them, I shall endeavour to speak, though very briefly, to them. And for that purpose shall first observe in general, that our Saviour here supposeth, that *the gates of hell* will do what they can to destroy his Church; but he assures us withal, that *they shall not prevail against it.*

First therefore, in that our Saviour saith, that *the gates of hell shall not prevail against his Church*, he plainly intimates and supposeth that they will do what they can to ruin and destroy it. Where, by *the gates of hell*, he means *the Devils* there, sitting as it were in Council, as the Ancients were wont

Shall ever  
withstand  
the Malice  
of its En-  
emies.

wont to do in the gates of their City, and there consulting together, how to undermine and overthrow the Church, that Christ hath Established upon Earth.

Serm.  
VII.

And verily, seeing that Christ came into the World on purpose to destroy the Works of the Devil; and that it is in and by his Church, that he always doth it, it is no wonder that the Devil endeavours all he can to destroy that: For if that could be once effected, he would meet with no opposition in the World, but would tyrannize over all Mankind as he formerly did, and still doth, where the Church is not yet settled. Whereas in such Places where Christ's Church is established, and so his Word and Sacraments are rightly administered, there the Devil's Power is opposed, his Service neglected, his Oracles silenced, his Stratagems countermined, and his whole Kingdom mightily depopulated and laid wast.

For when Men are first admitted into the Church, they renounce the Devil and all his Works, and list themselves under Christ's banner. And then whatsoever attempts the Devil may afterwards make upon them to recover them again into his possession; the Church by Christ's order keeps them under such discipline, and supplies them continually with such spiritual Armour of God's

*By the Discipline and orders of it so contrary to the Devils Policy*

Vol. I. God's Word, whereby they are enabled not only to withstand, but overcome them all. For she keeps their bodies under by fasting and watching, and their souls above the World by praying and praising God. She keeps their minds always filled with an holy awe and dread of God, by solemn reading and expounding his Word to them, and their faith in the Gospel strong and vigorous by frequent receiving of the holy Eucharist, whereby they are able to quench all the fiery darts, of the wicked one. And since they who carefully observe these and the like means of Grace which are there administered, are always actuated, influenced and assisted by Christ's holy Spirit, which according to his promise runs through his Church, and *resists the Devil* so as to make him *fly from them*: Infomuch that the grand Adversary of Mankind, can never attain his malicious ends upon any that hold constant Communion with the Church, and live up to the Rules and Orders of it, as they ought to do.

*Hence the Devil opposed it by the Wisdom and Power of the World at first.*

This he knows well enough. And therefore hath always had an implacable enmity and hatred against *the Church*, ever since it was first erected. And hath used all the Cunning and policy that he hath, and all the force and power that he ever could, some way or other to subvert it. It no sooner appeared

peared in the World but he raised up *Oracles* to plead, and *Philosophers* to dispute against it, *judges* to condemn, and *Emperours* to persecute it with the most exquisite Torments that he with all his art could put into their heads. And this he did for some Ages together: But when he saw that this would not do his work, but that *the Church*, notwithstanding, did not only keep its ground, but daily obtained more and more, so that *Emperours* themselves began to favour and abett it; then like an old Politician as he is, he betakes himself to another course, and endeavours to *divide it* against itself, by raising an intestine War in its own bowels. For which purpose he seduced many of those who outwardly professed to *hold Communion with the Church*, into such damnable Errours and Heresies, and hurried them on with so much fury and violence in the defending and propagating of the same, that the whole *Church was in danger of being torn into pieces* by them.

Serm.  
VII.

*Then by Divisions, Heresies and Schisms within and without the Church.*

But maugre all his attempts to the contrary, the *orthodox Faith* still prevailed, and *the Church* was settled upon the lasting Foundations of Peace and Truth. Which the Devil, to his great grief, observing, he then saw there was no other way but to turn himself into an *Angel of light*, and under that disguise to insinuate himself into the Church,

R

and

Vol. I.

and possess as many of the Members of it, as he could, either with *Superstitious* or *Schismatical* Opinions, and with blind ungovernable zeal for them more than for all the great Truths and Duties of the Gospel besides.

*These last means most mischievous.*

Whereby he hath certainly done more mischief to the Church, than by all his other devices put together: For by this means he takes off Mens minds from the *Substance* of Religion, and imployes them continually about the little *circumstances* of it, and so draws them on by degrees to a dislike of *the Church*, where true *Substantial Religion* is taught and practised, until at length they do not only separate from it, but join with him in opposing it with all their might. So that the Devil by this means hath always his Agents upon Earth, not only amongst the profest Enemies to all Religion, but amongst the professors of the Christian itself; always ready to carry on and execute the designs which he with his great Council in the *gates of Hell*, projects and contrives against the Church, whereby to disturb its Peace, and, if it was possible, overturn the very Foundations of it.

*But none shall prevail.*

But blessed be God, we have Christ's own Word for it, that *the gates of Hell shall never prevail* against his Church. And therefore we need not fear but he'll take care of it. He may suffer it to be under *fiery tryals* for some time, the better to purify and cleanse it. He may

may suffer some *corrupt Members* to be cut off, that the whole may not be infected with them. He may suffer *Heresies* and *Schisms* to be in it, that *they who are approved* of may be made manifest, as his *Apostle* tells us. He may suffer *false Christs* and *false Prophets* to arise in it, and to shew great signs and wonders; infomuch that if it were possible they should deceive the very elect, as he himself hath foretold. But after all he cannot suffer it to be totally destroyed: For he hath said, *he will not*. And we may well take his Word, who cannot lye, for it; Especially having had above 1600. Years experience of it already. In all which time *the gates of Hell* have been plotting and conspiring against the Church, and have used all the ways and methods that wit or malice could suggest, to compass the destruction of it; and yet they have not done it, but still the Church subsists and flourisheth as much as ever.

Serm.  
VII.

Mat. 24.

And it is well for us and for all Mankind it doth so: For if *Christ's Church* should be once destroyed, all hopes of Salvation by him, would perish together with it. And then the Devil would have his ends. For from that time forward Mankind would be in the same condition with him, inevitably lost for ever. For all the means of Grace would be taken away, and by consequence of Salvation too. The light of the Gospel would be

*Christians would be most miserable if the Church were ruin'd.*

R 2

exting-



extinguished, and the whole Earth overspread with darkness and ignorance, the *Oracles* of Heaven would expire, and those of Hell be revived again. The motives of God's holy Spirit would cease, and all Mankind would be hurried about with the impetuous suggestions and temptations of wicked and impure Spirits. In short, Christ's Kingdom would be thrown down, and the Devil's set up in its place. So that all the World would be brought into an entire subjection to him, and be *carried captive by him at his will, into that everlasting fire which is prepared for him and for his Angels.*

But what do I mean to suppose that which cannot be, and therefore ought not to be supposed. No, *Heaven and Earth shall pass away, but Christ's Words shall never pass away.* Luke 21. 33. He hath said that *the gates of Hell shall never prevail against his Church, and therefore it is impossible they ever should.* And the reason is, because that he, *like the wise Man*, that he himself speaks of, *hath built it upon a rock, and therefore although the rain descends, and the floods come, and the winds blow, and beat upon it, it cannot fall, for it is founded upon a rock,* Matt. 7. 24, 25. even upon himself the *of rock of Ages*, in the first place; and then upon *the Foundation of his Apostles and Prophets, he himself likewise being the chief Corner Stone.* So that the Devil may


may as well undertake to destroy Christ's real Body in Heaven, as his mystical upon Earth. For so long as he continues there, be sure his Church shall continue here. And never cease to be, till time itself shall do so. And then also it shall not be destroyed by Hell, but translated into Heaven, there to triumph for evermore. That all the World may know, how true our Lord is, and how faithfully he hath performed what he here spake to St. Peter, saying, *thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my Church, and the gates of Hell shall not prevail against it.*

Serm. VII.

*But the establish'd Church cannot be ruin'd how much soever in danger from Papists or Schismaticks.*

The Words being thus explained, it is easie to apply them to our present occasion, and juncture of Affairs. For as Christ said in another case, I may now in a great measure say to you *this day was this Scripture fulfilled in your ears.* For this day, *the gates of Hell* conjured the ruin of Christ's Church amongst us, but could *not prevail against it.* The circumstances of which Conspiracy are so many that it would be tedious; and so well known, that it would be superfluous to repeat them here, and withal so sad and tragical that the very relating of them would be too great an alloy to the Joy and Triumphs of the Day. Wherefore I shall not trouble you with them, but only observe in General, that the *Church of Christ* established in this Nation, having for a long time together held

*Tho' the Pope of Rome with his Emmissaris has attempted the ruin of the Church Establish'd.*

Vol. I.  Communion with that of *Rome*, had thereby contracted many *Errors* both in *opinion* and *practice*, which when she came to herself and had her eyes opened, she was so sensible of, that she saw it necessary for her to lay aside all Correspondence with *so corrupt a Church*, as that was, and to *reform* herself according to the Pattern of *Christ's Catholick and Apostolick Church*. Which she accordingly did, by the blessing of God, with so great *prudence* and *piety*, that she became both in *doctrine*, *discipline* and *worship*, one of the best and purest Churches that ever were upon the face of the Earth, every way exactly fitted to the great ends for which Christ instituted his *Church* in General; even for the advancing Gods glory, and for the bringing of Souls to Heaven.

This the Devil perceived all along, and therefore endeavoured what he could to prevent it. And for that purpose put so many rubs in the way, that it could not be effected without much time and difficulty. But when, notwithstanding his endeavours, it was at length accomplished, so that the *Church of Christ* was planted amongst us in its *highest purity* and *perfection*; he then resolved to try his Skill and exert the utmost of his Power to *destroy it root and branch*. In order whereunto having before this spread abroad an opinion in the *Church of Rome*, that it was both  
lawful

lawful and meritorious to **Affassinate**, **Murder**, and **Destroy** all Princes and People that would not submit to her, he now possessed some of that Communion with so strong a belief of it, howsoever contrary to the principles of the Christian Religion, that they looked upon it as their Duty as well as Interest to put it into practice, which therefore was accordingly attempted in the Reign of *Queen Elizabeth*, but still in vain.

But when, upon her decease, *King James* of famous, and ever blessed Memory succeeded as *rightful heir* to the Crown, and had publickly declared himself against all *Popish Errors* and *Superstitions*, then being acted with the foresaid diabolical Principle, they resolved to cut both him and his People off together at one blow, and that in the most barbarous and savage manner that was ever heard of, and such as cannot be thought of by *Christians*, no not by *Heathens* themselves without horror and amazement. For having in order thereunto laid in a great quantity of *Gunpowder* under the Lords house, they designed therewith to have blown up both the *King* and the *three states* of this Realm, then assembled in *Parliament*, all together; that so having, *Ahab* like, first killed and then taken possession of the *Church* and *Crown* of *England*, they might reduce them both into a slavish subjection to the *Court of Rome*.

R 4

But

Vol. I.



But this is too doleful a Subject to insist on long; Neither should I have mentioned it at all, but that both *the Day* and my *Text* require it. Forasmuch as from hence we may see what *the gates of Hell* have attempted against our Church; and also what our blessed Saviour hath done for it; who took care that this horrid conspiracy should not only be timely discovered, but that too in a *wonderful* manner, as *King James* himself observed, so that the Discovery appeared as plainly to be from *Heaven*, as the Invention of it was from *Hell*. Insomuch that we have all the reason in the World to acknowledge, as we do in the Service appointed for the day, that it was "Almighty God  
" who of his gracious goodness and tender mercy towards us, prevented the malice and imagination of our Enemies, by  
" discovering and confounding their horrid and wicked enterprize plotted and intended this Day to be executed against  
" the King and the whole State of this Realm for the subversion of the Government and  
" Religion established amongst us: and that this was one great instance of our Lord's fulfilling his promise, that *the gates of Hell*

*The Schismatics have attempted the like, but in vain.*

*should not prevail against his Church.*  
Neither is this the only Instance we have had of it. For there have been several others since, and one *especially* but very *lately*: For  
the

the Devil finding by experience how likely the Hellish Principle, before mentioned, was to take effect, resolved to try it again another way. For which end, knowing full well that when a branch is lopt off from the Tree it partakes no longer of the Sap, and then is good for nothing but to make Tools of; hence under one pretence or other he separated as many as he could from the Church, that so he might have them at his own beck, and fit them for the work he designed to do by them. Which done, he puffed them up with an high conceit, that *they* and their *Sect*, be it what it will, was not only godly, but the only godly Party in the Land; and therefore that they not only might but ought to do any thing to promote and propagate the same. But they being of many and different Sects, (and he cares not which they are of, so they be not *of the Church*) he saw it necessary to possess them all in common, with a pannick fear that *Popery* would prevail again; and with a strong belief, that they ought to do as much to keep it out, as the others had done to bring *it in*. Upon which they accordingly Conspired (I dread to speak it) to Assassinate the King that then was, his Royal Brother, our most Gracious Sovereign, and all *loyal Subjects* of all Orders and Degrees. Which as it was the greatest wickedness

Vol. I.



edness that *the gates of Hell* could ever invent, so it was certainly the most effectual course they could ever take for the Ruin of Christ's Church amongst us. But here again we may see Christ's faithfulness to his Promise, who, rather than the Conspiracy should prevail against *his Church*, set it against it self, not suffering some that were engaged in it to be at rest in their own Minds, untill they had discovered, and so prevented it for that time.


And when it afterwards broke out into open Rebellion, as ye know it did this last Summer, then he was pleased openly to appear in behalf of the *King and Church*; and by a little handful of Men, in comparison, to defeat and disperse *the Rebels* so as that we have just ground to hope they will never be able to disturb the Peace either of the Church or Kingdom any more.

Phanatical  
Conspiracy  
like a Popish  
one;

This I thought good to mention now, because this *Phanatical* was so exactly like to the *Popish Conspiracy* we this Day Commemorate, that we cannot truly express our Thankfulness to God for his preventing the execution of the *one*, and not of the *other* too. Insomuch, that unless another be appointed by Authority, I see no reason why this may not for the future serve for an *Anniversary-Day of Thanksgiving*, for our Deliverance from both: Especially, seeing that the Service

vice for the Day is for the most part so composed, as it were by the *Spirit of Prophecy*, that it may be equally applied to the *one* as well as to the *other*. I am sure we shall always have infinite cause to adore the Goodness, and to magnify the Power and Mercy of the most High God, for such wonderful Deliverances of the King and Church, as both these were, and to look upon them, as standing Monuments of his Truth and Veracity, who said, that *the gates of Hell* should not prevail against his Church.

Serm.  
VII.



But that we may be troubled no more with such *unnatural* and *hellish* Conspiracies, not so much as to be named amongst Christians, I heartily wish that all such would keep these Words of Christ continually in their minds: For then, if they have any sense at all of his Religion, they would be so far from harkening to any Temptations against his *Church*, that they would do what possibly they could for it. For here our *Saviour* plainly intimates, as I observed before, that all Attempts against the Church have their rise in *Hell*. There the Original Plot is laid; and what Men do in it upon Earth, is only to put the Devil's Designs into execution: So that all that engage in such Conspiracies, do in effect give up themselves to the Devil, to be employed by him in those horrid Projects that he is always carrying



Vol. L rying on against the Church. Whatsoever they profess, it is his Work they do; and he will one day pay them their Wages for it. They are but his Instruments, and when he hath done what Mischief he can with them, he'll throw them into the Fire, there to bewail their Folly and Madness for ever.

Folly and Madness, indeed! For Men to List themselves under *Christ's* Banner, and yet Fight for the *Devil* against him; and to devote themselves to his Drudgery, who hath no other Rewards to give them, but Eternal Flames; and who, whatsoever he may pretend, cannot promise them so much as the pleasure and satisfaction of ever accomplishing his Designs: For all this while they do but kick against the pricks, and labour to destroy that which Truth and Omnipotence it self preserves.

If these things were duly weighed and believed as they ought, we should hear no more of any such Conspiracies carried on against *Christ's Church*, by those who profess his Gospel; but instead of that, we should all make it as much our Business as it is our Duty, to promote it's Interest in the World, and especially in this Nation, where Almighty God hath appeared so miraculously for it, and Christ hath so faithfully performed the Promise that he hath made to it.

For



For from hence it is evident, that the *Interest of the Church* is the Interest of *Christ* himself; and therefore, that whatsoever is done for that, he reckons it as done for himself: For indeed he is the Supreme Manager of all its concerns, and all others that do any thing for it; not only under him, and by his assistance too, as well as order. And certainly, as he is the best Master that we can ever serve, so his Service is the most Honourable Employment that Mortals are capable of. Infomuch that all who have been so happy as to be any way Serviceable to him in the Preserving of his Church, have as much cause to thank God for the *honour* that he hath conferred upon them, as for the *success* that he hath given them in it. Especially considering, that this is the highest Service that we can ever perform to our great Lord and Master Christ, as conducing so much to the Salvation of so many Thousand Souls, which he hath purchased with his own Blood; that they may praise and glorify his Name for ever, as for his other Mercies, so in a particular manner for the many great and good Men that he hath raised up to *defend* that Church, in which they attained Salvation.

But so long as there are *Devils* in Hell, the *Church* will be sure to have Enemies upon Earth; striving all they can either to  
ruin

Vol. I. ruin or deprave it. And therefore it will be always necessary to be upon your Guard; and not only to defend it against all Assaults, but to prevent them too, as much as may be, that neither *Superstition*, *Heresy*, nor *Schism* may ever any more break in upon it. For which purpose we may observe, that when the *Church* was fallen so low, as in the great and long *Rebellion*, that no ordinary means could raise it up; then God himself was pleased to do it by his extraordinary Power, in the *miraculous* Restoration of it, together with our Gracious *Sovereign*. But now, that he hath not only set it up again, but hath supported, strengthened and established it by Civil Sanctions, he now expects, that these *lawful* means which he by his Providence hath ordained for the Preservation of it, be duly Administred: I say *lawful*; for as for *unlawful means* there can be no such thing in Nature. For nothing that is *unlawful* can ever be the means of any good, much less of so great a good as that is. And therefore it is plainly the Devils device to put Men upon attempting such things for the *Church*, which he knows can never do it good, but hopes may prove its ruine. Be sure it is Christ alone that doth or can *defend* his Church: And therefore they that would be subservient to him in so good a Work, must take such measures, and use such

such means as he prescribes or allows of in his Holy Gospel. And if that be done, we need trouble our Heads no more about it, but leave it to his protection who hath *all power both in heaven and earth* committed to him, and who hath given us his own infallible Word for it, that *the gates of hell shall never prevail against his Church.*

And verily as ye have all the reason in the World to continue your Endeavours for the Peace and Settlement of the *Church*, considering how much it conduces to the glory of God, to the ease and Safety of our gracious *Sovereign*, to the peace and welfare of the whole *Kingdom*, and to the salvation of your own and all the *Souls* that are in it; so likewise ye have all the encouragement imaginable to do it, seeing you serve a Master who can crown your Endeavours with Success, as well as your Heads with Glory for it: And that he will do what he can, you may now be confident from your own experience as well as from his Promise; as considering how great things he hath done already for it. Witness the occasion of our present Meeting; together with his Deliverance from the *Tumults* and *Conspiracies* and *Rebellions* lately raised against them; and making them all to work together for the good of both, both of the *Crown* and *Church*.

Let

Vol. I.  


Let us therefore mistrust our Saviour's care and kindness for our Church no longer : But express our thankfulness unto him for what is past, by putting our whole Trust and Confidence in him for the future ; and by giving up our selves entirely to his Service : that we may so live in his *Church militant* here on Earth, that we may also live in his *Church triumphant* in Heaven, through the same our Saviour and mighty Deliverer, *Jesus Christ*, to whom, with the Father and Holy Ghost, be all Honour, Praise, and Glory, now and for evermore.

---

S E R.

---



---

# S E R M O N V I I I .

---

Christianity, an Holy Priest-  
hood.

---

I P E T. ii. 5.

*Ye also, as lively Stones, are built up a Spiritual House, an Holy Priesthood, to offer up Spiritual Sacrifices acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.*

**W**HEN the Lord the Lord God Omnipotent, had by the Word of his Power commanded all things out of nothing, it is written, *That God saw every thing that he had made, and behold, it was very good,* Gen. i. 31. Every thing was just as He would have it, exactly fitted to the Ends and Uses for which He designed it; and therefore it was *very good* in his Sight, or He

S

was


Vol. I. was much pleased with it. And so He hath been ever since with all things in Heaven, except the *Apostate Angels*; every thing else moving and acting there continually according to his Will and Pleasure. Neither is there any thing that He hath made upon Earth, but what is *very good* in his Eyes, so that He is infinitely pleased with it, except *Mankind*; who being fall'n from their first Estate, are so far from being *very good*, that they are very bad in the Sight of God, as bad as bad can be: For it is written, *That God saw that the Wickedness of Man was great in the Earth, and that every Imagination of the Thoughts of his Heart, was only Evil continually, Gen. 6. 5.* This is the Case of Man in general, even of all Mankind, from first to last. There never was a mere Man from the Fall to this Day, that was every way such as God made him: And therefore never one, that did any one thing that in it self was perfectly good in the sight of God, and so pleasing or acceptable unto him. But the whole Race of Mankind being corrupted in all the Faculties of their Souls and Members of their Bodies, and always therefore acting irregularly and contrary to the Will of God, He is always displeas'd with them, and with every thing they think, or speak, or do of themselves, or by their own natural Powers. So that he might justly have condemn'd them all to the same everlasting

Mankind  
acceptable  
to God by  
Christ only.

lasting Fire, *that is prepar'd for the Devil and his Apostate Angels.* And would certainly have done it, but that He knew how to advance the Glory of his Goodness and Truth in restoring them to a Capacity of pleasing him again, and enabling them accordingly to do so, if they will, and to be willing also to do it.

This is a Mystery that is beyond the Reach of human Understanding. Neither could any Man have thought it possible, if God had not reveal'd it in his holy Word. But now that we have His Word for it, we have surer Grounds to believe it, than we have to believe any thing that we our selves can understand. From whence we may see how much we ought to value the Holy Scriptures; and likewise, how far the Christian exceeds all other Religions. For, tho' all sorts of People profess some kind of Religion, whereby they hope to please the God they worship; yet none have any sure Ground to believe they worship the true God, nor to hope that he will be pleased with what they do, but only they who believe the Holy Scriptures both of the Old and New Testament to be given by his Inspiration: Which seeing none but Christians do, none but they can be ever certain that any thing they do is pleasing unto God. But they may be certain of it, and ought to be so, in that they have



Vol. I.  the way and manner how to do it, most plainly reveal'd to them by God himself in many Places of his Holy Scriptures, and particularly in that which I have now read.

The Apostle writes this Epistle to the Elect or Saints of God. And having in the first Chapter put them in mind, how they became such, even by being born again by the Word of God, *ver. 21.* In this he adviseth them as *new born Babes to desire the sincere Milk of the same Word*, that as they were born; *so they may grow by it, ver. 2.* *If so be, saith he, ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious, ver. 3.* For if they had once tasted of it, as be sure they had, they could not but long for more of the Grace of Christ: Here call'd the Lord, as appears from the following Words, *To whom coming, as unto a living Stone; disallow'd indeed of Men, but chosen of God, and precious, ye also as lively Stones are built up a spiritual House.* For the Church being wholly built upon Christ, and all our Hopes of Salvation depending upon Him; for the better strengthening and confirming our Faith in Him, He is often spoken of in Holy Writ, under the Name and Notion of a *Rock* or *Stone*. *Behold, saith God by the Prophet, I lay in Zion for a Foundation, a Stone, a tried Stone, a precious Corner Stone, a sure Foundation; he that believeth in him, shall not make haste, or be confounded, Isa. 28. 16. Rom. 9. 33.*  
*And,*

Christ a  
Rock or  
Stone

## Holy Priesthood.

261

Serm.  
VIII.

*And, the Stone, saith David, which the Builders refused, is become the Head of the Corner.* Pſal. 118. 22. For that this Stone is Christ, appears from the many Places in the New Testament, where these Words are apply'd to him, Not only by his Apostle, *Acts* 4. 11. *1 Pet.* 2. 7. but by Christ himself, *Matth.* 21. 42. *Mark* 12. 10. *Luke* 20. 17. And to this the Apostle alludes in this very place, saying, *Unto whom coming as to a living Stone, disallow'd indeed of Men, but chosen of God, and precious; which is the same in effect with his being refused of the Builders, but chosen of God to be the Head of the Corner.* The Corner or Foundation Stone upon which the whole Fabrick resteth. *For other Foundation can no Man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ,* *1 Cor.* 3. 11.

Christ the  
Foundati-  
on Stone of  
his House  
or Temple;

But the Apostle here calls him a *living Stone*, to shew that this is only a Metaphorical Expression; denoting his Firmness and Stability, together with the great Need there is of Him in erecting the House here spoken of: But that He is not such a *Stone* as those we see upon Earth, that are all without Sense and Life, but a *living Stone*; a Stone that hath Life in it self, and gives Life to all that come unto Him, and are built upon Him. And therefore the Apostle having said, *To whom coming as to a living Stone*; he adds, *Ye also as lively,* or

S 3

rather

Vol. I. *rather as living Stones, are built up a spiritual House.* He is such a living Stone himself, that he makes them also who come unto him, to be so. Who therefore as such are built up a Spiritual House: An House of God, a Temple, where in the living God himself is pleased to dwell; According to that of the Apostle to the Saints at *Corinth*, *Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?* 1 Cor. 3. 16. Chap. 6. 19. And to those at *Ephesus*, *Now therefore ye are no more Strangers and Foreigners, but Fellow-Citizens with the Saints and of the Household of God. And are built upon the Foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief Corner Stone. In whom all the Building fitly framed together groweth unto an Holy Temple in the Lord. In whom ye also are builded together for an Habitation of God through the Spirit,* Eph. 2. 19, &c. Whence we see, that the whole Communion of Saints, the Body of Christ, are the spiritual House spoken of in my Text; *the House of God, or his Habitation*, by reason of his Spirit dwelling in them. And therefore they are all of the same Household, the *Household of God*, as it is here call'd: And elsewhere, *the Household of Faith*, Gal. 6. 10. Because it is by Faith that

that they are built upon Christ the Foundation of this House. Hence it is that they are all advised to *build up* one another in their most holy Faith, *Jud. 20.* And the Apostle often speaks of *edifying* the Church, *edifying* the Body of Christ, *edifying* one another in Love; that all things may be done to *edifying*, and the like. All which Expressions have Relation to this spiritual House, denoting the Necessity of our being edify'd or built up in Faith and Love, so that we may be real Parts of it, and grow up into a Holy Temple in the Lord.

But in every Temple of the Lord, it is necessary that there be likewise a Priesthood to offer Sacrifices suitable to such a Temple. And so there is here. For the Apostle having said, that the Saints are a *spiritual House* or Temple, he adds, That they are also an *Holy Priesthood*. As they are the *living Stones* of which this Temple is composed and consisteth, so they are likewise all of the Order of Priesthood; an *holy Priesthood*, proper for such an House where the most holy God resideth. This was first revealed in the Old Testament, where God said, *his People should be unto him a Kingdom of Priests*, *Exod. 19. 6.* A Kingdom wherein all the Subjects are both *Kings and Priests*: Or as St. Peter a little

Christians,  
or Saints  
an Holy  
Priesthood

Vol. I. after my Text expresseth it, a *Royal Priesthood*, 1 Pet. 2. 9. And how they come to be so, we learn from St. *John*, saying, *That Jesus Christ hath made us Kings and Priests to God and the Father*, Rev. 1. 6. Chap. 5. 10. As he gives his Saints a *Kingdom*, so he consecrates them all to be *Priests*; not such as were under the Law, when the *Priesthood* was confined to one Family, and offered up only carnal Sacrifices, but they are an *holy Priesthood*, ordain'd to offer up *spiritual Sacrifices*, acceptable to God by *Jesus Christ*.

For the Understanding of which Words it will be necessary to consider, what *Sacrifices* they are which the Saints offer up to God; wherefore they are call'd *spiritual Sacrifices*: and that these spiritual Sacrifices are acceptable to God by *Jesus Christ*.

Their Spiritual Sacrifices acceptable to God thro' Christ.

*First* therefore, a *Sacrifice* in general is properly something that we give or offer to God for our own. For tho' we have nothing but what He first gives to us, yet when He hath given it to us, we have a civil Right to it; it is our own in respect of all other Men. But when we give it back again to God, divesting our selves of our own Right to it, and transferring it wholly to Him, then he looks upon it as a *Sacrifice* offer'd up to Him, and is plea-

pleas'd to accept of it as such. Under the Law, God commanded, that Oxen and Sheep, and Lambs, and such like living Creatures, should be offer'd up in *Sacrifice* to Him, which being kill'd by a *Priest*, were consum'd either by Fire upon the Altar, or else by those who waited at it, and so were fed as it were at God's Table, of such things as were offer'd to Him. But these *Sacrifices* being ordain'd only to foreshew and typifie the *Lamb of God that taketh away the Sins of the World*, they ceased in course, when *He had offer'd up Himself a Sacrifice for our Sins upon the Cross*. But now under the Gospel, other kind of *Sacrifices* are requir'd of us. We are now commanded to *present our Bodies as a living Sacrifice*, Rom. 12. 1. Not to kill them, but to offer them up a-live, as a *living Sacrifice*, by devoting our selves wholly to the Service of God; by *mortifying our Members that are upon the Earth*, Col. 3. 5. and *crucifying the Flesh with the Affections and Lusts*, Gal. 5. 24. By keeping our Bodies under, and bringing them into Subjection to our Souls; by subduing our Passions; *denying Ungodliness and worldly Lusts, and living soberly, righteously and godly in this present World*, Tit. 2. 12.

*Ourselves, when present a Sacrifice in the Christian Sense.*

Hence

Vol. I.  
 Our good  
 Deeds

Hence all manner of good, pious, and charitable Works, that are done in Obedience to God, and for His Service and Honour, are now call'd *Sacrifices*. As where the Apostle saith, That the Things which the *Philippians* sent him, were *an Odour of a sweet smell, a Sacrifice acceptable, well pleasing unto God*, Phil. 4. 18. And to do good, saith he, *and to communicate forget not: For with such Sacrifices God is well pleased*, Heb. 13. 16.

Indeed under the Law itself; these were reckoned the best sort of *Sacrifices*, and prefer'd before those that were ordained in the Ceremonial Law. Behold, saith Samuel, *to obey is better than Sacrifice, and to hearken, than the fat of Rams*, 1 Sam. 15. 22. *The Sacrifices of God*, saith David, *are a broken Spirit: a broken and a contrite Heart, O God, thou wilt not despise*, Psal. 51. 17. *Wherewithal*, saith the Prophet, *shall I come before the Lord and bow my self before the high God? Shall I come before him with burnt Offerings, and Calves of a Year old? Will the Lord be pleased with thousands of Rams or with ten thousands of Rivers of Oyl? Shall I give my First-born for my Transgression? The fruit of my Body for the Sin of my Soul? He hath (bewed thee, O Man,*

Man, what is good: And what doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly, and to love Mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God, Mic. 6. 6, 7, 8.

Serm.  
VIII.

There are many such places in the old Testament where this is so plainly reveal'd, that the Scribe who talk'd with our Saviour, could not but own, That for a Man to love God *with all his Heart, and his Neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt offerings and Sacrifices*, Mark 12. 33.

But *Sacrificing* in general, being a publick owning of God and his Sovereignty over the World, whereby we openly testify our Acknowledgement and Belief, that He is the Almighty Creator, Possessor and Governor of all Things, and that we are obliged to Him for all the Blessings we enjoy; therefore by the *Sacrifices* which are here said to be offer'd by the *Holy Priesthood* spoken of in my Text, such Duties seem to be more especially understood, whereby we now set forth the Glory of God, by joining together in making our publick Profession of our Dependance upon Him, and our manifold Obligations to Him.

Particularly our open or publick Praying to Him, and to Him alone, for all the good Things

Our Devotions.



Vol. I. Things that we want. For hereby we plainly discover that we believe him to be the Author and Giver of *every good and perfect Gift*: That we neither have nor can have any thing but what we receive from him: And that he is so just and true to his Word, that he will give us whatsoever he knows to be good for us, *if we ask it of Him according to His Will*. And therefore under the Law it self, their publick Prayers always went along with their daily *Sacrifices* both Morning and Evening, and were performed at the same time, even while the Lamb was roasting upon the Altar. And this was it self also reckoned as a *Sacrifice* offer'd up to God. *Let my Prayer, saith David, be set forth before thee as Incense, and the lifting up of my Hands as the Evening Sacrifice.* Psal. 141. 2.

Especially considering that *Prayer* always was, and ought to be accompanied with *Praise* and *Thanksgiving* to God, which is so properly a *Sacrifice*, that it is often call'd by that Name. *I will offer, saith David, to thee the Sacrifice of Thanksgiving.* Psal. 116. 17. *And let them Sacrifice the Sacrifices of Thanksgiving, and declare his Works with rejoicing or singing,* Psal. 107. 22. And this even in those Days was more acceptable unto God, than

than all their other *Sacrifices*. *I will praise the Name of God, saith he, with a Song, and will magnifie him with Thanksgiving. This also shall please the Lord better than an Ox or Bullock that hath horns and hoofs, Pſal. 69. 30, 31.* The Apostle also, to shew that this is properly an Evangelical Sacrifice, such as St. Peter speaks of in my Text, saith, *By him therefore, even by Christ, let us offer the Sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips, giving thanks to his Name, Heb. 13. 15.*

Serm. VIII.



But the *Sacrifice* that is most proper and peculiar to the Gospel, is the *Sacrament* of our *Lord's Supper*, instituted by our Lord himself, to succeed all the bloody *Sacrifices* in the *Mosaick Law*.

*But more particularly the Holy Sacrament of the Lord's Supper.*

For tho' we cannot say, as some absurdly do, that this is such a *Sacrifice* whereby Christ is again offer'd up to God both for the *Living* and the *Dead*; yet it may as properly be call'd a *Sacrifice* as any that was ever offered, except that which was offer'd by *Christ* Himself. For *his* indeed was the only true *expiatory Sacrifice* that was ever offer'd. Those under the Law, were only *Types* of his: And were call'd *Sacrifices* only upon that account, because they typified and represented that which he was to offer for the Sins

Vol. I. Sins of the World. And therefore *the Sacrament* of Christ's Body and Blood, may as well be called by that Name as they were. They were *Typical*, and this is a *commemorative* Sacrifice. They fore-shewed the Death of Christ to come: This shews forth his Death already past. For as often, saith the Apostle, *as ye eat this Bread, and drink this Cup, ye do shew the Lord's Death, till he come.* 1 Cor. 11. 26. This is properly our *Christian Sacrifice*, which neither *Jews* nor *Gentiles* can have any share in; As the Apostle observes; *We have an Altar, whereof they have no right to eat, which serve the Tabernacle,* Heb. 13. 10. An *Altar*, where we partake of the great *Sacrifice* which the *Eternal Son of God* offer'd up for the Sins of the whole *World*, and ours among the rest; That *Almighty God* may be reconciled to us, and receive us again into his *Love and Favour*, and make us happy in the *Enjoyment* of it for ever. Which is so great a *Blessing*, that they who really mind their own *Good and Welfare*, can no more forbear to partake of *this Sacrament* when they may, than they can forbear to eat when they are hungry, and have *Meat* before them.

These

These are those *Spiritual Sacrifices* which the *Holy Priesthood*, or whole Body of Saints, offer up to God. The Apostle calls them *Spiritual*, in opposition to those *Carnal Sacrifices* that were offer'd by the *Levitical Priesthood*. And because they are of a *Spiritual Nature*, and performed in a *Spiritual Manner*, being offer'd up in the Spirits of the Saints as well as Bodies: And by the *Spirit* of God himself, dwelling in them, and so consecrating them a *Spiritual House*, an *holy Priesthood*, and enabling them to offer up these *Sacrifices* in the Name of Christ, and through the Merits of that *Sacrifice* which he hath offer'd for them: According to that of the Apostle in the place before quoted, by him *therefore let us offer up the Sacrifice of praise to God continually*. It is by him only that they can be offer'd up so as to be acceptable unto God. And when they are offer'd up by him, they can be acceptable unto God no otherwise than by him too. As we are here taught by the Apostle, saying, That these *Spiritual Sacrifices* are *acceptable to God by Jesus Christ*.

Serm. VIII.

How Spiritual Sacrifices become acceptable to God.

All that I have hitherto discoursed upon these Words, being only in order to clear the way for that which I chiefly design'd in the choice of them, even to shew how our *Spiritual Sacrifices* come to be acceptable

Vol. I. table to God by Jesus Christ (to our unspeakable comfort); I shall now by his Assistance search into the bottom of it, and lay it as open as I can. For which purpose we may first observe, that, by the *Levitical Law*, when a Man brought an *Offering to the Lord*, of his Flock or his Herd; the Priest was to burn it all upon the Altar, and then it was said to be a burnt Sacrifice, an Offering made by Fire, of a sweet Savour unto the Lord. Levit. i. 9, 13. &c. What we translate, sweet Savour, in the *Hebrew* is, ריח ניחוח, a Smell of Rest. Such a Smell, whereby God rested satisfied with the Sacrifice from whence it came, instead of the Death of the Offerer, or such Punishment as was due unto him for his Sins. But he was first to put his hand upon the head of his burnt Offering: And then, the Text saith, it shall be accepted for him, to make atonement for him, v. 4. The Death of the Sacrifice was accepted of instead of the Death which he must otherwise have suffer'd for his Sin. So that God was thereby atoned or reconciled to him, and well pleased again with him, as much as if he had not sinned. Not by any Virtue in the Beast that was killed and burnt, but by reason of the *Typical* Relation it had to the Sacrifice of the Death of Christ, whereby

whereby he offer'd up himself in our stead, and so to make atonement, or propitiation for our Sins. Serm. VIII.

Now as the Apostle in my Text calls our Devotions and good Works by the Name of *Sacrifices*, so he asserts them to be acceptable to God, as the *Legal Sacrifices* were. St. Paul expresseth the same thing in the very Words of the Law, saying, That the good Works of the *Philippians* were *an Odour of a sweet smell*. And then he explains it, by adding, that they were *a Sacrifice acceptable, well-pleasing to God*, Phil. 4. 18. And so all the *good Works* that we sincerely perform in Obedience to the Will of God, altho' they are not absolutely perfect in themselves, yet he accepts of them as much as if they were, and is as well pleased with them, and with him that doth them. He looks upon them as *good Works*, such as he would have us to do, and accordingly rewards us for them, by giving us those great Blessings which he hath freely promised to those who obey and serve him. Thus therefore our *Spiritual Sacrifices* are here said to be acceptable to God. But not for any worth or value in themselves, but by Jesus Christ. To understand this, we must consider,

*Spiritual Sacrifice acceptable to God only through Jesus Christ.*

T

i. There



1. There is nothing which we do, that is acceptable or well-pleasing to God in it self. For God is pleased with nothing but what is exactly agreeable to his own Will. But nothing that we do is so in all points. But do what we can, we still fail either in the Matter, or in the Manner, or in the End, or in some Circumstance or other. So that, as the wise Man observes, *there is not a just Man, that doth good and sinneth not.* Eccl. 7. 20. not only, that always doth good, and never sins: But that doth not sin in the good he doth, by not doing it as he ought in all respects. But nothing is good, that is not all good, without any failure or defect in it. Which seeing nothing we do, is: Therefore nothing we do, can be of it self acceptable to him, *who is of purer Eyes than to behold iniquity,* any Iniquity, without Abhorrence and Indignation.

In the next place we may observe, that as all our *Spiritual Sacrifices* are thus unclean in the sight of God, so it is not in the Power of any or all the Creatures in the World to cleanse them, so as to make them acceptable to him, without Christ. Neither is there Salvation in any other. *For there is no other Name under Heaven given among Men, whereby we must be saved.* Act. 4. 12. Whereby we can be saved

saved from the Wrath of God, which is due to every Sin and Transgression of his Law, one as well as another; to the Defects and Imperfections of our best Actions, as well as to the worst that we ever did, or ever can do.

And therefore Christ himself saith, *That without him we can do nothing.* John 15. 5. Nothing that is truly good: Nothing that God will accept of, without *him*. Inasmuch that without him, our whole Lives are but as one continued Sin and Provocation against him, in whom we live. As they who do not believe in him, will one day find by woful experience, notwithstanding all their pretensions to *Vertue* and *good Works*. For whatsoever they may pretend, they can neither exercise any one *Vertue*, nor do any one Work that can be properly termed Good, and therefore acceptable to God, without Christ.

But by him St. *Peter* here saith, that our *Spiritual Sacrifices* are acceptable to God: And so doth St. *Paul* too, where he saith, that *we are accepted in the beloved.* Eph. 1. 6. In Him, of whom God the Father said, *This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.* Matth. 3. 17. chap. 17. 5. This was proclaimed by a Voice from Heaven upon two several Occasions, at his

T 2

Bap-



Vol. I. *Baptism*, and at his *Transfiguration*; the better to assure us, that He is the beloved Son in whom God is pleased to manifest his Love and Favour to Mankind: That as the Law was given by Moses, Grace and Truth came by Jesus Christ, John 1. 17. Grace: All the Grace and Mercy that we receive from God, comes by Him. Particularly that whereby He is graciously pleased to accept of any thing that we Sinful Mortals do. And therefore in the Epistle to the *Hebrews*, the Apostle prays, That God would make them perfect in every good Work, to do his Will, working in them that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ. Heb. 13. 21. It is only through him that God enables us to do good Works; and it is only through Him, that the good Works we do are well pleasing unto God.

But how this comes to pass, that what we do should be acceptable to God by another, even by Jesus Christ, is a Mystery which the Angels desire to look into, and the more they look the more they Admire; And so shall we, if we do but cast our Eye upon what is revealed of it in God's holy Word. Where we find,

1. That this Jesus Christ is the Eternal Son of God, of one Substance with the Father, and that in the fulness of Time, he  
took

took upon him the Form or Nature of Man, so as to be in One and the Same Person both God and Man; Man in general. Not only a particular human Person as every one of us is, but as the *first Man Adam* was, one in whom the whole Nature of Man is contain'd. Who therefore is called also the *Second Man*, 1 Cor. 15. 47. and *Adam*, that is, Man in general, as the *First* was, ver. 45. But with this mighty Advantage, that the *First* was only Man: The *Second*, not only Man, but God too. God of the same Nature with the Father, as well as Man of the same Nature with all other Men.

Serm. VIII.

*Because Christ an High Priest was Man in general.*

2. We there find, that as the *First Man Adam*, and in him all Mankind broke the Law of God; so the *Second* kept it perfectly, never doing any one thing that was there Forbidden, nor leaving any one thing undone that was there Commanded. But *he went about continually doing Good, and fulfilling all Righteousness*. So that his whole Life as Man, was one continued Act of Obedience to the Will of God. Which being performed by him in the whole Nature of Man, was as much as was required of all that are of that Nature, and more too. Forasmuch as no more was or could be required of all Mankind than the Obedience of so many Fi-

*Because the Obedience of his Life was Infinite.*

Vol. I. *nite* Creatures; Whereas is was the Obedience of a Person that is Infinite; and therefore infinitely surpassing all that could ever have been done by the whole Race of Mankind.

*The Obedience of his Death that of an Infinite Person.*

3. We there also find, that He was thus obedient not only through the whole course of his Life, but to Death it self, *even the Death of the Cross*, Phil. 2. 8. He did not only suffer that accursed Death, but he suffer'd it in perfect Obedience to the Will of God. But Death being due only for Sin, he never having sinned, could not suffer it for himself. But as he suffer'd it in the Nature of Man, so he suffer'd it for all that are of that Nature. And therefore he is there said to have died for us, and for our Sins: *To have tasted Death for every Man*, Heb. 2. 9. and *to have given himself a Ransom for all*, 1 Tim. 2. 6. For all of that Nature in which he died. So that his Death was a sufficient Price for the Redemption of all Mankind; It being equivalent to the Death of all Men; And of infinitely greater Worth and Value, in that it was the Death of an Infinite Person.

*He is an Heavenly Mediator.*

4. We there find also that this Divine Person, having thus suffer'd Death in the Nature of Man, he in that rose again, went up into Heaven, and is there exalted

ted at the Right Hand of God, to be the *Mediator between God and Men*, in whose Nature he is now there, appearing in the *Presence of God for us*, 1 Tim. 2. 5. Heb. 9. 24. *As the Propitiation for our Sins, and for the Sins of the whole World*, 1 John 2. 2. *And is able to save to the utmost all that come unto God by Him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them*, Heb. 7. 25.

*Lastly*, We find in Holy Writ, that they who believe in this Jesus Christ, are said to be in him, to abide in him, as a Member in the Body or a Branch in a Tree, and so to partake of him, Heb. 3. 14. and of all he did and suffer'd upon Earth, and of all he is now doing in Heaven: Where he looks upon them as his own, his Disciples, his Servants, his Friends, his Brethren, his Sheep, his peculiar People; and accordingly takes particular care of them, as their Saviour, their Mediator and Advocate with the Father, interceding continually for them, and for them only. *I pray for them*, saith he, *I pray not for the World, but for them, which thou hast given me, for they are thine*, John 17. 9.

*Of whom we all are Partakers.*

Now these things being thus briefly laid down together, we may easily see, how the *Spiritual Sacrifices* which the *Spiritual House* and *Holy Priesthood* here spoken of,

*In whom God is well-pleas'd*

Vol. I. *offer unto God, come to be acceptable to Him by Jesus Christ.* For this Spiritual House being wholly made up of such as *come to Christ, and believe on him,* as we learn from the Context, *v. 4, 6, 7.* Therefore they are built up in him, as *St. Peter* here saith, or as *St. Paul* expresseth it; *In him they are builded together, for an habitation of God through the Spirit.* Ephes. 2. 22. So that they have a near Relation to Him, and an Interest in Him, and He in them: They are wholly His; and are actuated and influenc'd by that Holy Spirit that proceeds from Him, as the Members of a Body are by the Animal Spirits that flow from the Head. *Rom. 8. 9, 13, 14.* It is by this Spirit of Christ, and so by Christ himself that they offer all their *Spiritual Sacrifices,* and do all the good Works that are required of them: According to that of the Apostle, *I can do all things through Christ that strengtheneth me,* Phil. 4. 13. But what is done by Christ or his Holy Spirit, is done by God Himself. And so far as any thing is done by himself, so far be sure he is well pleas'd with it, as He is with every thing which He Himself doth. This therefore is one Reason wherefore the *Spiritual Sacrifices,* which his People offer are *acceptable to God by Jesus Christ,* because they

they are offer'd by Him, in whom God is well-pleas'd. Serm. VIII.

But although they be thus led by the Spirit of Christ, yet while they are in the Body, *the Flesh lusteth against the Spirit*; so that do what they can, there are many Blemishes and Imperfections in their *best Sacrifices*, which would hinder their being *acceptable* unto God, if Christ did not cover them with his *own Sacrifice*. But He having offer'd up Himself as a Sacrifice for the Sins of the whole World, by Vertue of that, He makes Atonement and Reconciliation for all the Sins of those who believe in Him, and particularly for the Imperfections of their Duties and Performances: For which He Himself hath born the Punishments, and therefore intercedes, That God would not be angry or displeas'd with them: But be graciously pleas'd to accept of the *imperfect Sacrifices* which they offer Him, for the sake of that absolutely perfect Sacrifice which He himself had offer'd in their stead. And hence it is that Almighty God having *His Sacrifice* always in His Eye, overlooks the Imperfections of theirs, and accepts of what they do, through the Merits of that Death which His only Begotten Son hath suffer'd for them.

*And permits him to be an Intercessor for our Imperfections;*

But that nothing might be wanting to render the good Works which his Servants do by his Assistance, as *acceptable* to God through Him,

*And to impute his Righteousness;*

Vol. I. Him, as it is possible for them to be, he doth not only wash out their spots with his Blood, but he adorns them also with his own Righteousness, that perfect Righteousness which he fulfill'd through the whole course of his Life. For that also being, as we have seen, perform'd in the whole Nature of Man, and therefore applicable to all that are of that Nature, he accordingly applies it to all that by Faith *come unto Him* for it. As all His faithful People be sure do: As well as St. Paul, when he desired to *be found in Christ, not having his own Righteousness which is of the Law, but that which is through the Faith of Christ: The Righteousness which is of God by Faith*, Phil. 3. 9. Where we see, he desired and accordingly had another Righteousness besides that of the Law, the Righteousness which is through the Faith of Christ, *who knew no Sin, and yet was made Sin for us, that we might be made the Righteousness of God in Him*, 2 Cor. 5. 21. *Who of God was made unto us Righteousness as well as Wisdom*, 1 Cor. 1. 30. *The Lord our Righteousness*, Jer. 23. 6. So that we may every one say, *Surely in the Lord have I Righteousness and Strength*, Isa. 45. 24. *Strength to do good Works, and Righteousness to make them acceptable when they are done. As they may well be: Seeing it is the Righteousness of God Himself, who is well-pleased with every thing*

thing that he himself doth, and with nothing else.

Serm.  
VIII.

From hence therefore we may see, how the *Sacrifices* which his People offer come to be *acceptable* to God by Jesus Christ, even because they are offer'd by the Assistance of his Holy Spirit: Cleanſed by the Merits of the Death He suffer'd in their ſtead, and perfected by the Righteouſneſs which He himſelf performed in their Nature. And being begun, continued and finiſhed in and by himſelf, he looks upon them as his own Words, and is therefore well-pleas'd with them, as he was with every Thing He made at firſt; when it was ſaid, *That God ſaw every thing that He had made, and behold it was very good.*

Hence we have great Encouragement to do all we can in the Name of the Lord Jesus.

Now what a mighty Encouragement is this to do all the good we can in the World? For who would not pleaſe Him that governs all Things in it, and diſpoſeth of every thing as He himſelf pleaſeth! And yet we ſee, that we little, we ſinful Creatures upon Earth, may do ſuch Things as are *acceptable* and well-pleaſing to the Great God of Heaven, though not in themſelves, yet by His only Begotten Son *Jesus Christ*. But for that purpoſe we muſt do all ſuch good Works as He hath ſet us. And *whatſoever we do in Word or Deed, we muſt do it in the Name of the Lord Jesus*, Believing and truſting on Him to perfume it with the Incenſe of his Ointments, that ſo it may



Vol. I. may be *acceptable* to God by him. And then it will most certainly be so. For we have the Word of God Himself here for it: As we have now heard. And therefore when we have offer'd any Sacrifice, or performed any Service to him, we ought not to doubt, but be fully perswaded in our Minds, that although there be no Merit, but many Imperfections in it, yet that God is Graciously pleas'd to accept of it, and will accordingly reward us for it, both in this World and the next, thro' the Merits and Mediation of his Son *Jesus Christ*: To whom be Glory for ever.

---

S E R.

---



---

# S E R M O N IX.

---

## The Preparatory Duties for *Holy Orders.*

---

A C T S xiii. 3.

*And when they had fasted and  
pray'd, and laid their Hands  
on them, they sent them away.*

**I**T is our great Happiness that we live in so pure and sincere a Part of Christ's *Holy Catholick Church*, that as we have nothing *superfluous*, so neither is there any thing wanting that can any way conduce to our Eternal Salvation in it, much less any thing that is *necessary* in order thereunto: As, amongst other things, the right *Ordination* of those who administer the Means of Grace, must needs be acknowledg'd to be; for seeing we can have no Grace or Power to do Good, but what is derived to us from  
God,

*The Church  
of England  
a pure part  
of Christ's  
Catholick  
Church.*

Vol. I. God, through our Lord and Saviour *Jefus*  
*Gbrift*, in the Use of the Means which he  
 hath establish'd in his Church for that Pur-  
 pofe; unlefs thofe Means be rightly and duly  
 adminiftr'd, they lofe their Force and Ener-  
 gy, and fo can never attain the End, where-  
 fore they were established. Neither is there  
 any thing more neceffary to the right Admi-  
 niftration of the Means of Grace, than that  
 they who adminifter them be *rightly or dain'd*  
 and authorized to do it, according to the *In-*  
*ftitution* and Command of him that did eſta-  
 bliſh them. For feeing they do not work  
*naturally*, but only by *Vertue* of the *Inftituti-*  
*on* and Promise annexed to it; unlefs that be  
 duly obſerved, we have no Ground to expect  
 that the Promise ſhould be performed, nor  
 by conſequence that they ſhould be effectual  
 to the Purpoſes for which they are uſed.

*The Inſti-*  
*tution of*  
*Chriſt ob-*  
*ſerved in*  
*the Order-*  
*ing of Her*  
*Minifters;*

•And certainly there neither is, nor ever  
 was any Provincial or National Church up-  
 on Earth, wherein the *Inftitution* of Chriſt  
 and his Holy Apoſtles in this Particular, hath  
 been more punctually obſerved, than it is in  
 ours. For as the Biſhops and Paſtors of our  
 Church have by a *ſucceſſive* impoſition of  
 Hands continued all along from the *Apoſtles*,  
 receiv'd the *ſame Spirit* which Chriſt breath-  
 ed into them for the effectual Adminiſtrati-  
 on of the Word and Sacraments; ſo do they  
 after the ſame manner *confer* the ſame Spirit  
 upon

upon others even by *laying their Hands* upon them, according to the Institution of Christ made known and confirmed to us by the Practice of his Apostles and Catholick Church in all Ages since. And herein it is that the Essence of *Ordination* doth properly consist. Neither doth our Church thus strictly observe this Institution by using this Apostolical *Imposition of Hands* upon such Occasions in general only, but likewise she useth the same Means and Methods that the Apostles did, for the preparing those whom she intends to ordain for the receiving the *Holy Ghost* by such *Imposition of Hands*, and for the more effectual obtaining it for them. For which Purpose she appoints certain *Seasons* every Year for this great Work, and requires that all her Members join together at these Times in *Fasting* and *Prayer* to Almighty God for his Direction of the *Bishops* who shall then ordain, and for his Grace and Heavenly Benediction upon those who shall be *then ordained to any Holy Function*. And that this is exactly agreeable to the Practice of the *Holy Apostles* in this Case, is plain from these Words, *And when they had fasted and pray'd and laid their Hands on them, they sent them away*. They first *fasted* and *prayed*, and then *laid their Hands* on them.

In Fasting  
and Pra-  
yer, and  
Imposition  
of Hands.

The

Vol. I. The Occasion of the Words in brief was this. There were in the Church of *Antioch*, five Persons eminent for the Gift of Propheſying and Teaching, and as they were on a certain time together, faſting and praying, and miniſtering to the Lord, the Holy Ghoſt either by Inſpiration, they being Prophets, or by ſome particular Revelation, ſaid to them, *Separate me Barnabas and Saul, two of the Company, for the Work whereunto I have called them.* From whence we may obſerve, how neceſſary it is that they who are admitted to the ſacred Miniſtry of the Goſpel, be *externally* as well as *internally* call'd, and *publickly* *ordained* to it by the Church. *Saul* was called before by Chriſt himſelf, and both he and *Barnabas* were Prophets Divinely Inſpired, and yet for all that, they muſt be *outwardly called* and *ordained* by the Church too, before they could be ſent out to *preach the Goſpel.* Yet, the Holy Ghoſt and ſo God Himſelf commands it, who at the ſame time that he commanded them to be *ſeparated* or *ordained* by the Church, could if he had pleas'd have come upon them without the *Impoſition of Hands*, or the Miniſtry of any Men. But howſoever to keep up the Order which Chriſt hath eſtabliſhed in his Church, He only ſignifies his Pleaſure that He would have them *ordain'd*

Upon an external Call, which is neceſſary as well as an Internal one.

*dain'd*, and then those *Prophets* and *Teachers*, which are supposed to have been some *Bishops* or *Pastors* in and about *Antioch*, must *lay their Hands* upon them, that so they might by that Means receive the *Holy Ghost* and Power to administer the Word and Sacraments. Which is a full and undeniable Argument for the *Necessity* of Persons being solemnly and publickly ordain'd by the *Impositions of Hands*, before they undertake to minister in the Church, whatsoever Gifts or Parts, or *inward Calling* they pretend to. For none certainly could ever pretend to any *inward Call* to the Ministry more than *Paul* and *Barnabas* might: And yet it seems that would not serve their Turn, but they must be outwardly called and ordained by the Church too, before they presume to meddle with any Holy Function. And questionless the great Reason why this is so punctually described and recorded by the Holy Ghost in Scripture, was, that all People might take Notice of it, and not expect that the *Holy Ghost* should ordain them Himself, when he would not ordain those Eminent Saints *Paul* and *Barnabas* Himself, but leaves them to the Church, and expressly commands them to be ordained by her. *Separate*, saith he, *Barnabas and Saul to the Work whereunto I have called them*. It seems He Himself had call'd them to the Work, and for all that

U

they

*That the People may not be cheated by vain presences to an inward Call only.*

Vol. I. they must be ordained by Men, before they would enter upon it.

The Holy Ghost having thus commanded the Prophets and Teachers there present to separate these two Persons, it follows, *and when they had fasted and pray'd and laid their Hands upon them, they sent them away.* From whence we may observe ;

*Imposition of Hands laid on us necessary in Ordination from the beginning.*

1. That altho' the Holy Ghost said only, *separate me Barnabas and Saul*, they knew well enough what he meant by it, even that they should *lay their Hands* upon them, and so ordain or separate them *to the Work whereunto they were called.* Which plainly shews, that the Rite or Ceremony of *laying Hands* upon those who were to be set apart for the Work of the Ministry, was not only commonly known at that time, but looked upon as necessary to be observed ; and that it was approved of by the Holy Ghost Himself, is manifest from the following words, for so soon as hands were laid upon them, it is said, that *they were sent by the Holy Ghost.* v. 4.

*Fasting and Prayer previous to the Imposition of Hands in all ages.*

2. We may observe hence that before they would lay their hands upon *Barnabas and Saul*, they fasted and prayed. Which certainly is recorded on purpose for our imitation, that the Church in all Ages might follow so good an Example, and not lay hands upon any Persons for the admit-

admitting them to any holy Function, untill that they have fasted and pray'd, as they here did.

Serm.  
IX.

Now we, in Imitation of this holy Example, and in Conformity to the Practice of the Catholick and Apostolick Church, being now assembled here upon the same Occasion, as these were, when they ordain'd *Barnabas* and *Saul*, even to fast and pray in order to the *laying on of Hands* upon Persons to be set apart for the Sacred Ministry of the Church, it may not be amiss if we consider a little how reasonable and necessary it is that we should do so. It is true, this one Instance is not only a sufficient warrant for it, but it lays an Obligation upon us to do it. But howsoever, as we cannot imagine but they had great Reasons for it, so it must needs be very convenient to consider what they were, both to justify our present Assembling, and to excite those who are to be ordain'd, to a more serious Performance of these two great Duties of *Fasting* and *Prayer*, as preparatory to their Ordination.

*First*, as for *Fasting*, we shall soon acknowledge the great Use of that, in order to the fitting Persons for *Ordination*, if we do but consider how much it conduceth towards an holy and good Life, and to the fitting and qualifying us for the Service of  
U 2 God



Vol. I. God in general, both in its own Nature, and by Virtue of the Promises which God hath made to it.

In what Sense *Fasting* in its self is one great Means of our being and doing good, we shall easily understand, if we do but consider two things.

As it influences the Soul,

1. That the *Soul*, the Seat of all Virtue and Goodness, altho' it be a distinct Substance from the Body, and so is capable of acting separately from it, even whilst it is in it, yet so long as it is ty'd to the Body, and actually informs it, so as to be but one Part of that Composition which we call Man, it ordinarily makes use of the Organs of the Body, especially of the Animal Spirits in all its Actions. And these only are properly Call'd *Human Actions*, which are thus perform'd by the whole Man. Which therefore cannot but depend very much upon the Temper of the Body that concurs towards the Performance of them. As we find by daily Experience they do; for if our Bodies be out of Tune, so are our Minds too. If any thing affect our Heads, disturb our Brains, and so disorders the Animal-Spirits, which the Soul makes use of in its Operations, they are likewise disorderly and irregular. As in Musick, tho' the Artist be never so skilful, yet if his Instrument be out of tune, there can be no Harmony or Melody, in what he plays upon

upon it. Yea, none of us but may easily observe, that whatsoever Humour prevails most in the Body, as Phlegm, Choler, Melancholy, or the like, our Actions are usually tainted with it. Infomuch, that by them we may easily discover what that Humor is which is most predominant. From whence it plainly appears, that so long as the Soul is in the Body, altho' it was design'd to rule and govern it, yet it is apt to be govern'd by it and to indulge and humor it so far as to follow not its own Reason and Judgment, but the more impetuous Inclinations of the sensitive Part, altho' it be to its own Ruine and Destruction.

And the Body, to good;

2. Hence therefore it necessarily follows in the next place, that *Fasting* and *Abstinence* cannot but conduce much to the Exercise of true *Piety* and *Vertue*, in that, if duly perform'd, it *keeps the Body under*, and *brings it into Subjection* to the Soul. By which Means, the Soul being kept always in its Throne, with full Power and Authority over its Subjects, the inferiour Faculties, and being under no Restraint from them, its Reasonings would be always clear, its Judgments sound, its Counsels deliberate; it would always act like its self, a rational and spiritual Substance, and so would be as free from all brutish and sensual Vices, as when separate from the Body which inclines it to them. And then it

Vol. I. will begin to relish spiritual Objects as suitable to its own Nature. For it will look upon *Vertue* and *Vice*, not as they are falsely represented by the Imagination corrupted with the Humours of the Body, but as they are in themselves, and so discern clearly how lively and amiable the former is; how odious and detestable the latter, and by consequence exert all its Power to follow the one, and avoid the other.

Suppressing  
Gluttony  
and Drunkenness.

Luxury and  
unclean-  
ness,

To explain this more fully, I might descend to Particulars, and shew how *Fasting* and *Abstinence*, by *keeping the Body under*, doth of itself contribute very much to the mortifying of most Lusts, and to the quickning the contrary Graces in us. For which end, I need not instance in *Gluttony* and *Drunkenness*: For these being directly contrary, yea, contradictory to true *Fasting*, where this is rightly observ'd these *Vices* must needs cease of their own accord, and the contrary *Vertues*, of *Temperance* and *Sobriety* take their Places. The same may be said of *Luxury* and *Uncleaness*, for that proceeding only from too great a Plenitude and Luxuriancy of Humours in the Body, if the Body be kept under, as it ought, we can have no Inclinations to such *Vices* as these.

But there are other *Vices* also which at first sight may seem more remote to our present Purpose, as not depending so much upon

upon the Temper of the Body, and yet they also may be very much prevented or cur'd by *Fasting*. As for Example: Are we apt to be angry and peevish, to fret and be disturb'd at every little thing that happens, as many are? This commonly proceeds from immoderate Dyet, or constant Feeding to the full, which breeds abundance of Choler, and overheats the Animal Spirits, whereby they are apt to take fire, and be inflam'd at every thing that occurs contrary to our present Desires. But by *Fasting* and constant *Abstinence*, the Choler would be abated, the Spirits cooled, and so the Mind reduced to a sedate, meek and gentle Temper.

And so for *Self conceitedness*, *Covetousness*, and such like Sins as proceed commonly from the Corruption of the Fancy caus'd by those malignant Humours, which by reason of over much eating, are exhaled from the Stomach into the Head, and there disturb the Imagination so as to represent things as in a magnifying Glass, and make them seem what they are not, Great, and Good. *Fasting* prevents the very engendring of such Fumes, and by consequence, the Corruption of the Fancy by them. By which Means, the Mind is able to judge all things as they are, and so to see clearly that there is nothing in our

Serm.  
IX.



Self-love,  
Covetousness,

Vol. I. selves that we can justly be proud of, nor in this World, that we can in reason desire or covet to make us happy.

And pro-  
motin: Holy  
exercises. 3

And then on the other side, as it helps towards the suppressing of most *Vices*, so also towards the Exercise of *Grace* and *Vertue*, especially to the due Performance of our Devotions, whether Publick or Private. For whence comes that Dulness? whence those Distractions which we commonly find at such times? whence, I say, come they, but from that Hurry of gross Vapours in the Brain, which obstruct its Passages, and crowd about it so disorderly, that the Soul cannot, without much Time and Pains, rally them together, and reduce them into such an Order, as to make any tolerable use of them? And therefore as these Distractions are caused by overmuch eating, so they may in a great Measure be cured by *Fasting*. Hence it is that none of us but may find by Experience, that we can never perform any spiritual Exercise with that Life and Vigour, with that Chearfulness and Alacrity, with that constant Presence and Composure of Mind, as when our Bodies are empty, and so kept under, as to be in *due Subjection to the Soul*.

I might instance in many other Particulars, whence to shew, how *Fasting* doth  
of

of it self contribute much to the Extirpation of most *Vices*, and to the planting and growth of true *Vertue* and *Goodness* in us. But most others depend upon, or may be referr'd to these already mention'd. And therefore there is the same Reason for them as there is for these; so that we may justly conclude this with a remarkable Passage of St. *Ferome*, in his Epistle to *Celantia*, where he saith; That Fasting and Abstinence, *non castitati tantummodo, sed omnibus omnino virtutibus opitulatur.*

But the Great and Principal Reason of all, why it doth so, is still behind: And that is, because that *Fasting* is so pleasing and *acceptable* to Almighty God, that he hath promised a Blessing, a Reward to it, whensoever it is rightly performed. And that too, not by the Mouth of a *Prophet*, an *Apostle*, an *Angel*, but by his own *Divine Mouth*, when he was here upon Earth. For our Lord himself saith, *When thou fastest, anoint thy Head, and wash thy Face, that thou appear not unto Men to Fast, but to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly,* Matth. 6. 18. From whence it is plain, that if a Man *Fast*, not out of a vain Ostentation to be seen of Men and thought Holy, but out of a sincere Design to keep his *Body* under, and so fit himself the

But more especially as 'tis pleasing to God;

Vol. I. the better for the Service of God, that Man shall most certainly be rewarded for it. But what Reward shall we have? Why, God will bless and sanctify it to the great Ends and Purposes for which it is design'd. *Fasting*, as I have shewn, doth conduce much to our being Holy, but it cannot make us so. That is only in the Power of God, the only Fountain of all true Grace and Holiness; but he being well pleased with *Fasting*, where it is duly performed, doth by his own Grace and Spirit make it effectual for the subduing our Lusts, and for the Performance of all *Holy* and *Good Works*.

The Reward of Fasting and Abstinence.

For our better understanding of this we may consider, That altho' God can work either with Means or without Means, or by contrary Means, as he himself sees good, yet he ordinarily makes use of the most fit and proper Means that can be used, for the effecting of what he designs. And it is Presumption in us to expect he should do otherwise. But *Fasting*, as we have seen already, is a very fit and proper Means, as of it self conducing much to a vertuous and good Life. And therefore they who give themselves to *Fasting* and *Abstinence*, as they ought to do, are always in God's way, using the proper Means for the obtaining of true *Grace* and *Vertue*.

*Vertue.* And so need not doubt but he will bestow it upon them. Whereas they who refuse or neglect such Means, have no more Ground to expect his Blessing and Assistance, than they have to expect that he should work Miracles for them.

And besides that, altho' the most high God, the chiefest, the only Good, be always ready, and free to communicate of himself, and to distribute the Graces of his Spirit, it is to those who are rightly disposed for the Receipt of them, whose Bodies as well as Souls are fitted for the Inhabitation of the Spirit, or as the Apostle words it, to be the *Temple of the Holy Ghost*. But certainly no Bodies are so fit and proper for so Divine a Guest, as those which by *Fasting* and *Abstinence* are kept in continual Subjection to the Soul. For it being the Soul that is primarily inspired, and sanctified by the Spirit, unless the Body be subject to the Soul, it will not be subject to the Spirit that is in it, but the *Flesh will lust against the Spirit*, Gal. 5. 17.. Whereas, if the Body be kept clean and pure, always at the Beck of the Soul, ready and willing to observe its Commands, then the Spirit that enlightens, actuates, and quickens the Soul, will with great Facility diffuse its Influences over the whole Man, so as to sanctify it throughout.



Vol. I. out. For then the Body being subject to the Soul, and the Soul to the Spirit, as the Spirit is, so will the Soul and Body be in their Capacities pure and holy.

Hence it is, that the greatest Discoveries that God hath made of Himself to Men, and the most powerful Effects of the Spirit upon them, have usually been when they were *Fasting*, and so in a right Disposition for them. Thus *Moses was fasting forty days and forty nights*, even all the while that he was conversing with God upon Mount *Sinai*, and received the Law from Him. *Exod. 34. 28.* *Elias had fasted forty Days and forty Nights*, when God discoursed so familiarly with them upon Mount *Horeb*, *1 Kings 19. 8.* Our Lord himself also, tho' he had no need of it, his Body being always perfectly subject to his Soul, yet for our Example and Imitation, *fasted forty Days and forty Nights*, even all the while that He was in the Wilderness overcoming the Devil, and had the Angels to minister unto Him, *Matt. 4. 2, 11.* *Daniel was fasting* when the Angel *Gabriel* was sent to acquaint him with the precise Time of the *Messiah's* coming, *Dan. 9. 3, 21.* *Cornelius*, by whose Conversion the Door of Salvation was open'd to the *Gentiles*, he was also *Fasting*, when the Angel was sent to instruct him how to get to Heaven, *Acts 10. 30.*  
And

And to name no more, in this very Place where my Text is, the Disciples at *Antioch* were *fasting*, when the Holy Ghost in a miraculous manner spoke unto them saying, *Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the Work to which I have called them.* By all which it appears, that when Men are *fasting*, and so their Bodies are subject to their Souls, then God takes the opportunity of manifesting himself and his Pleasure to them, and also directing and assisting them in the way to Bliss. And by consequence, that *fasting* is a Duty of greater moment than it is commonly thought to be.

Serm.  
IX.

Now these things being premised concerning *fasting* in general, it is easie to conclude, that it is very reasonable at least, if not necessary, to *fast* upon such Occasions as these. For seeing that *Abstinence* and *Fasting* conduce so much to the suppressing of Vice, and to the Exercise of Vertue, to the correcting the Errors of our Fancies, and the Disorder of our Passions, to the quickning and invigorating our Devotions, and so to the more effectual obtaining the good Things we want and desire at the hands of God; it must needs be very requisite, that we and the whole Church joyn heartily and sincerely in it, when any Persons are to be admitted into *Holy Orders*, that so we may

The necessity of Fasting before Holy Orders,

For the Church.

Vol. I. may the more effectually implore the Grace and Favour of the All-wise God, in “guiding and governing the Minds of “his Servants, the Bishops and Pastors of “his Flock, so that they may make choice “of such Persons as he himself knows to “be fit to serve in the Sacred Ministry of the Church, and in assisting “those which shall be ordain’d with “his own Grace and Benediction, that “both by their Life and Doctrine they “may set forth his Glory, and set forward the Salvation of all Men, thro’ “Jesus Christ our Lord.

*For the  
Candidates*

And as for those who are to be ordained to an Holy Function, nothing certainly can be more necessary than for them to Bring their Bodies by *Fasting* and *Abstinence* into a due Subjection to their Minds, that so they may be rightly prepar’d and disposed for these great Blessings we pray for, and particularly for the *receiving the Holy Ghost*, which shall be conferr’d upon them at their *Ordination*: That there be no Obstacle or Impediment in themselves, but that they may be ready both in Soul and Body, to receive not only *Power* and *Authority* to Administer the Word and Sacraments, but likewise such *Aids* and *Assistances* of the Holy Spirit, whereby they may be enabled

enabled to do it *carefully, sincerely, effectually.* Sermon IX.

And this seems to be the Reason, why the Disciples here Fasted both before and at the Ordination of *Barnabas* and *Saul*. For before they ordained them or so much as had pitch'd upon whom to ordain, they fasted, for it is said, *As they Ministered to the Lord and fasted, the Holy Ghost said, separate me Barnabas and Saul.* From whence it seems very probable, that the Church being very much enlarged, found it necessary at this time to encrease the Number of their Pastors, and not knowing whom to choose, they set apart some time for Fasting and Prayer to Almighty God, that He would be pleased to direct them in it, who accordingly did so. For as they were thus *Ministering* to Him, and *Fasting*, the Holy Ghost said, *separate me Barnabas and Saul.* Now what they did then, we are now doing. It is upon the same Account that we are now ministering to the Lord, and fasting. And altho' we have no Ground to expect any such immediate Revelation as they had, yet if we do but perform this Duty as *sincerely* as they did, there can be no doubt but that Almighty God will hear our Prayers as well as theirs; and direct the Bishops and Pastours of our Church, as he did them, to choose

According  
to Apostolical Ex-  
ample.

Vol. I. choose such Persons as he himself approves of, and would have ordain'd to the Ministry of His Church.

Neither did they think it enough to fast before, in order to their making a good Choice of Persons to be Ordain'd, but they fasted again at the very time when they Ordain'd those, which by the Direction of the Holy Ghost they had made choice of for the Purposes aforesaid, even for the more effectual obtaining the Spirit for them, and for the better fitting and qualifying of them for the receiving of it; which therefore I humbly conceive is very convenient, if not necessary to be observ'd by us too.

Prayer to  
be join'd  
with Fast-  
ing at such  
times.

But here we may further take notice, that as they fasted, so they pray'd too at the same time. Which two Duties are frequently put together. *Daniel* and *Cornelius* beforemention'd, were fasting and praying when the Angel came to them. Our Lord tells us, *There are some kind of Devils that cannot be cast out but by Fasting and Praying.* And to come nearer to our present Purpose, when *St. Paul* and *Barnabas* had ordain'd them *Elders* in every Church, and had fasted with Praying, saith *St. Luke*, *Acts* 14. 23. From whence it appears that they ordained others after the same manner as they themselves were ordain'd, even with

with *Fasting* and *Praying*. And doubtless, the same Course ought always to be taken in conferring *Orders*, not only from the Example of the Holy Apostles, tho' that would be sufficient, but likewise from the Reason of the thing. For *Fasting* upon this Occasion, is chiefly design'd for the fixing our Thoughts, for the exciting our Affections, and for the disposing our Minds the better, to *pray* and supplicate the Divine Majesty, for his Direction in the Choice of fit Persons to be *ordained*, and for his Blessing upon them whom they have ordain'd to any *holy Function*: For which Purpose, no better Means can be used than *Prayer* joined with *Fasting*, For tho' the *effectual fervent Prayer* of the *Righteous*, of its self availeth much, when it is join'd with *Fasting*, it availeth more. As our Lord himself plainly intimates in the Passage before cited, where he saith, That *such Devils are not cast out but by Prayer and Fasting together*. Some kind of Devils may be cast out by *Prayer*, without *Fasting*; but none can withstand them when they go together. And the Reason seems to be, because *Fasting* is not only of it self *acceptable* to God, but also because, by *Fasting* our Bodies being *kept under*, our Hearts will rise higher, and our Minds be more intent, our Affections

X

more

Vol. I.

more pure, and our Desires more earnest, and by consequence, our Prayers more effectual and prevalent with Almighty God, for his granting the good Things we pray for.

Especially, they who are to be ordain'd, must be sure not only to *fast*, but to *pray too*. And as the Church prays for them, so they must pray for themselves too, that God would vouchsafe to bestow his Spirit upon them. And that he will do it if sincerely desir'd, we have the Word of Christ himself for it, saying, *If ye then being evil, know how to give good things to your Children, how much more will your Heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?* Luke 11. 13. Which we see exactly verify'd in my Text, for *Saul and Barnabas* having *fasted and prayed*, and so receiv'd Imposition of Hands, it presently follows, that *they were sent forth by the Holy Ghost*, which was conferr'd upon them by the *Imposition of Hands*, according as they had *pray'd* it might.

But it is now time to apply what hath been said upon this Subject in general, to you who are to be *ordain'd*, and whom it more particularly concerns. And therefore I shall now address my self wholly unto them.

*Beloved*

for Holy Orders.

307

Beloved Brethren,

Serm.

IX.

I hope you are all sensible of the Greatness of that *Office* which you now desire should be conferr'd upon you, and by consequence, of the *Necessity* that lies upon you to prepare your selves for it. And you have now heard how you ought to do that, even as the *first Ministers* of the Gospel did it, that is, by *Fasting* and *Prayer*. And therefore I would not have you look upon it as an unnecessary Task and Burden imposed upon you, to spend this, and other days this Week in the Performance of these *great Duties*. For you see it is no more than what the first Preachers of the Gospel did, and the Reason of the thing requires from you; insomuch, that you should rather give Thanks to God, that you are put in mind to do those things which are so necessary to the preparing and qualifying of you for the great Work you are now to undertake. Having therefore so happy an Opportunity put into your Hands, let me advise and beseech you to be as diligent and serious in the Use and improvement of it. Devote this and the other Days set apart for *Prayer* and *Fasting* upon this Occasion, wholly to your Performance of these great Duties they are set apart for. Think it *not* enough that you have the *Prayers* of other devout

X 2

People



Vol. I.

you your selves are here present this Morning, and join with us in the *publick Prayers* of the Church, neither yet think it sufficient that you have heard something of the *Usefulness* and *Necessity* of *Fasting* and *Praying*, in order to the preparing your selves for *Ordination*; but act accordingly. *Fast* and *Pray* in private, as well as publick, that you may be worthy to receive the *Holy Ghost*. And in your private Devotions, I think it would do very well if you observ'd these few Rules.

*Directions  
to Candidates for  
Holy Orders.*

I. If you have it not already, get the Form or Office of our Church according to which you are to be ordain'd. And consider seriously what is there said concerning the *Dignity* and the *Difficulty* of that Office which you are now to be admitted unto. And do not content your selves with reading over that excellent *Exhortation* and *Instruction* which is there given you, but weigh every Word and Sentence in it. For there is nothing in it but what highly concerns you to understand and remember, for it is supposed that you have well weighed and pondered those things before you go to be *ordain'd*: And that you have clearly determin'd to apply your selves wholly to that *Office* whereunto it pleaseth God to call you.

Having

## for Holy Orders.

309

Serm.]

IX.




Having thus possessed your Minds with a due Sense of the *Greatness* and *Excellency* of that Work you are called to, and of the End and Design of your being call'd to it; in the next place consider seriously the several Questions, which in the Name of God, and of his *Church*, shall be put to you, when you come to be *ordain'd*. And do not resolve to give those Answers to them which the Church requires, before you have considered whether you can really and in *Conscience* do it.

As for Example: The first Question propounded to those who shall be ordain'd *Deacons*, is this, *Do you trust that you are inwardly moved by the Holy Ghost, to take upon you this Office and Ministration, to serve God for the promoting of his Glory, and the edifying of his Church?* Which certainly is a Question that you cannot easily answer, unless you have duly weigh'd it before-hand. And therefore in your private *Retirements*, search impartially into your own Hearts, and bethink your selves seriously, whether by the Providence of God, and the *Assistance* of his Holy Spirit, you are fitted and qualify'd for that *Office*, and sincerely desire to be admitted into it, for no other, or at least no greater End or Purpose, than that you may *promote* God's *Glory*, and *edify* his *People*. And if upon

*That they fully consider what they promise and vow,*

X 3

due

Vol. I.  due Examination, you find it is really so with you, then you have as good Ground to trust that you are *moved to it by the Holy Ghost*, as if he had expressly commanded you *to be separated to the Work whereunto he hath called you*, as he did here to *Barnabas and Saul*.

I shall not prevent your private Meditations by running over all the Questions here, but only desire that you would all do it, every one by himself, and that you would deal plainly and faithfully with God and your own *Consciences* in it. As considering that every Answer you there make in the *Presence* of God, upon so solemn an Occasion as that is, is, and ought to be accounted every jot as *Sacred* as any *Oath* whatever, and doth as much bind and oblige you to the Performance of what you there promise. And therefore such Answers are not to be made rashly, neither must you venture upon obliging your selves to God and his *Church*, by such solemn Promises as these are, without mature *Deliberation* and sincere *Resolutions* to perform them, *the Lord being your Helper*.

*Ten Fast and Pray for God's assistance in the performance of their Duty.*

And indeed by that time that you have duly weighed the *Office* you are to be admitted into, and the Promises you make when you are admitted into it, you will soon

*for Holy Orders.*

311

Serm.  
IX.

soon find how difficult, or rather impossible it will be to discharge the one or the other, without the *special Grace* and Assistance of God himself. Which therefore you must be sure to *pray* for in private as well as publick. For this is the other great and necessary Duty which is now incumbent upon you; and which you must perform with all the Seriousness, Vigour and Earnestness that you possibly can: As knowing that both your own, and other Mens Salvation depends very much upon it. And, therefore when you are got into your Closets, where none sees you but that God whose *Ministers* you are now to be, make it your humble and hearty Request to him, that as he is pleased to confer *this Office* upon you, so he would vouchsafe you such a *Measure* of his *holy Spirit*, whereby you may be enabled faithfully to execute the same according to his Will and your own Promise.

And if you thus sincerely perform both your publick and private Devotions, and prepare your selves by *Fasting* and *Prayer* against the Time of your *Ordination*; as you need not, so you ought not to doubt but God will then hear your Prayers, and bestow his Spirit upon you, so as not only to *authorize*, but likewise to

X 4

*assist*

Vol. I. *assist* you in the administering his Word and Sacraments, and in the faithful Discharge of the Office he calls you to. For which purpose it is very expedient, that while the *Bishops Hands* are upon your Heads, especially when he saith in the Ordination of *Priests, Receive the Holy Ghost*, your Minds be fully intent upon Almighty God, and your *Faith* fixed upon the *Promises* that he hath made to that purpose in *Jesus Christ* our Lord. For then he will most certainly grant your Desires, and you will *receive the Holy Ghost* for the effectual discharge of your Duty, both as *Ministers* and *Christians*, that you may both shew others the way to Bliss, and walk in it your selves.

Directions  
for Mini-  
sters after  
their Or-  
dination.

Having thus consider'd how you ought to *prepare* your selves for your *Ordination*, and how to carry your selves at it; I must desire you in the last place, to have a care of your selves afterwards too. For which purpose, when you are ordained, always keep it in your Minds, what Relation you then stand in to Christ, as being his *Ministers*, the *Stewards of the manifold Mysteries of God*, and behave your selves accordingly. For remember that the Efficacy of the Word and Sacraments Administred by you, depends not upon your small Qualification, but upon Christ's


*In-*

*Institution*, and his *Promises* annex'd to Serm. IX. it. And therefore you may be Instruments in God's Hand for the saving of others, and yet you your selves may be damn'd.

This *St. Paul* himself was very sensible of, and therefore saith, *I keep under my Body, and bring it into subjection, lest by any means when I have preach'd unto others, I my self should be a Cast-away*, 1 Cor. 9. 27. And what a sad thing would it be, that others should be brought to Heaven by your means, and yet your selves shut out? For the preventing whereof, I would advise you to take this course.

1. Do as *St. Paul* did, *Keep your Body under, and bring it into Subjection, by Fasting and Abstinence*. Which is every whit as necessary after you are *Ordained*, to the execution of your Office, as it was before in order to your admission into it. And not only to the due execution of your Office, but likewise to your performance of all other *Duties* that are required of you, in order to your eternal Salvation. For if so eminent a *Saint*, so great an *Apostle* as *St. Paul*, was forced to keep his *Body under*, lest after all his care and pains in shewing others the way to Heaven, he himself should miss of it; sure you and I had need to *Fast* and *Pray* to purpose, left

*Fasting and Prayer necessary for all Ministers, in a due discharge of their Office.*

Vol. I.  lest when we have spent our Days in administering the Word and Sacraments for the Salvation of others, we our selves should perish everlastingly.

*The reading the Office of Ordination on Fasting-Days, a great help to them.*

Moreover, that you may never forget the Duties which your great Master, Christ, requires of you, nor yet the Promises you made to him when you were *Ordain'd*, it would be very well, if you would often, especially upon *Fasting-Days*, read over the *Offices* for making or ordering *Priests* and *Deacons*, and consider what Questions were then propounded to you, and how you answer'd them. I need not tell you what Advantage this would be to you. Do but make tryal of it, and you your selves will find it by your own Experience.

Another thing that I would mind you of, is this, that although your Ordination respect not the Church of *England* in particular, but Christ's Holy Catholick Church, so that when ordain'd *Priests* or *Deacons* here, you are so all the World over; yet so long as you continue to execute your *Office* in *our Church*, be sure to observe punctually the *Orders* and *Constitutions* of it; which, as it is your *Duty*, in obedience to the *Church* you live in, so you will find it to be your *Interest* too. For our Church hath taken care that all the means of Grace and Salvation should be duly administred to

*A strict observance of the Churches Orders a mighty Comfort to them.*

to all that live in her *Communion*. And you will be now in the Number of those to whom the Administration of them is committed. If you therefore keep close to the Rules that she hath set you in it, it will ease you of a great deal of care and trouble, for you need look no further, for the full discharging the Trust reposed in you; for by this means you will discharge it *faithfully*, and will be found to have done so, when you come to stand before our Lord's Tribunal at the last Day. Whereas, if you, thro' Carefulness or Self-Merit, shall neglect, diminish, or alter any thing that the Church, out of Obedience to Christ's Commands, hath provided for the Salvation of those committed to your Charge, and any of them by that means perish, their Blood will be required at your Hands.

Serm.  
IX.

And then, *Lastly*. As Christ is pleased to honour you so far as to admit you into his own *Ministry*, endeavour all ye can to adorn it with an holy and good Life. Adjust your Actions to all the Rules that he hath prescribed in his holy Gospel. Live above the World, and make it your constant, your only Care, Study, and Business to serve, honour, and obey your great Lord and Master in Heaven. In short, as he who hath called you is Holy, so be ye Holy

A regular  
Life, the  
greatest Or-  
nament.



Vol. I. *Holy in all manner of Conversation: That so you may shew your Flock the way to Heaven, both by your Precept and Example. Do this, and you will save your selves as well as them that hear you. Which God of his infinite Mercy grant we may all do, thro' Jesus our Lord; To whom with the Father, and the Holy Ghost, be all Honour and Glory, now and for ever.*

---

S E R.

---



---

# S E R M O N X.

---

## The Efficacy of Faith on the Ministration of the Word.

---

I T H E S S. ii. 13.

*For this Cause also thank we God without ceasing, because when ye received the Word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the Word of Men, but, as it is in Truth, the Word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.*

**I**N you that believe; There lies the Emphasis, and the Foundation of all that I design at present to build upon these Words. St. Paul having been at *Thessalonica*, and preached the Word of God to the Inhabitants of that City; many of them hearkened to what he said, not as spoken by a *Philosopher*, but by an *Apostle* sent from God, and therefore *receiv'd* it, not as *the Word of Men*, which may, or may not

Faith in  
the Word  
preach'd,  
makes it  
efficacious.

Vol. I. not be true, but as it really was, the infal-  
 ~~~~~  
 lible *Word of God* himself. For this the  
 Apostle here tells them, *he thanked God*  
*without ceasing*, ascribing it wholly to his  
 Power and Goodness: And puts them with-  
 all in mind of two Things; *first*, of the  
 great Force and Efficacy which the Word  
 they so received had upon them. *The Word*  
*of God*, saith he, *which effectually worketh*  
*in you*. It had, it seems, its whole Effect,  
 its End, its perfect Work upon them, inso-  
 much, that, as he saith, in the following  
 words, *they were now able to suffer as much*  
*for the sake of Christ, as the Churches in*  
*Judea did*. And then, *secondly*, he ac-  
 quaints them also how the Word of God  
 came to have so much Power upon them,  
 even because they believed it; *which effe-*  
*ctually worketh*, saith he, *in you that be-*  
*lieve*: In you, and none else, and in you  
 only as believing it, without which they  
 could not have been wrought upon, nor  
 would have received any Benefit at all by it.  
 According to that also of the *Apostle to the*  
*Hebrews*, where speaking of the Gospel  
 preached to the Jews under the Law, he saith,  
*The Word preached did not profit them, not be-*  
*ing mixed with Faith in them that heard it,*  
*Heb. 4. 2.* But the Apostle in my Text  
 speaks only in the present Tense, *ὡς ἐπι-*  
*τεταται*, which effectually worketh, not  
 which

which wrought only when ye heard it, but doth so now, *ἐν ὑμῖν τοῖς πιστέουσιν*, in you believing, or that *do believe*. As if he had said; Seeing you still *believe* the Word you heard, it still continues to *work effectually* in you.

Serm.

X.

I have been the more particular in explaining the Words to you, that you may better see into the Ground of what I would observe from them, which is, that the Efficacy of God's Holy Word upon our Minds depends upon our *believing* it; that whatsoever we hear, can make no Impressions at all upon us, unless we *believe* it, nor any longer than we do *believe* it. But so long as we continue to *believe* what is preached to us out of God's Word, so long it will *work effectually* in us, towards the *bringing us out of Darkness into Light, from the Power of Satan unto God*.

The Understanding of this will be of great Use to shew, both where the Fault lies, that so many in our Age are no better for having the Word of God so often preached to them, and also how we may be always the better for it? For which Purpose therefore we shall *first* consider, what we are to understand by *the Word* of God, and *then* what by *believing* it.

The Word is the System of Divine Revelation in Old and New Testament.

By *the Word* of God, we are to understand the whole System of Divine Revelations, as they are now contained in the Books of the Old

Old

Vol. I. Old and New Testament, *for all Scripture being given by Inspiration of God, 2 Tim. 13. 6.* it is all, one part as well as another, equally *the Word* of God; So that we have *the Word* of God Himself, that whatsoever is there commanded or forbidden, it is his Will that we should or should not do it; that whatsoever is there threatned against impenitent Sinners, or promised to the Penitent, He Himself will see it fulfill'd; that whatsoever is there recorded to be said or done, was accordingly said or done, just as it is there recorded; that whatsoever is there fore told, shall certainly come to pass. And that whatsoever is there affirmed, is infallibly true, as being affirmed by him who cannot lye. And by our *believing* all this, we are to understand, our being fully perswaded of the Truth and Certainty of it, in a manner suitable to the Ground that we have for it, even the *Word* of God Himself, which being the firmest Ground we can have for any thing in the World, we ought to be perswaded in the highest manner that can be, of every thing that is there written.

This being premised in general, it will be easie to demonstrate the Truth of this Proposition, That *the Word* of God, howsoever it is preached or made known, *effectually worketh in them that believe it.* For we find by constant Experience, that a firm Belief  
or

## Ministration of the Word.

321

Serm.  
X.

or full Perswasion of any thing, even in this World, hath that Power over our Minds, that it carrieth all our Affections after it. If we really believe a thing to be good for us, we cannot but love it, and desire it, and labour after it, and be glad when we have got it. If we really *believe* a thing to be evil or hurtful to us, we cannot but hate it, and abhor it, and shun it, and be troubled when it falls upon us. And this, altho' this our *Belief* or Perswasion be grounded only upon our own Fancies, or corrupt Reason, or upon the Testimony of our Fellow-Creatures upon Earth. How much more, when it is grounded upon the Testimony of God Himself? *If we receive the Witness of Men, the Witness of God is greater,* 1 John 5. 9. It is indeed the greatest that can be in the World. And therefore such things as God Himself hath attested, and we accordingly believe as we ought upon his Testimony or Witness, must needs prevail the most powerfully upon us, and *work* the most *effectually* in us, that it is possible for any thing in the World to do.

To make this the more plain and easie to be understood, I shall briefly run through the several Parts of God's Holy Word, and shew how each of them operates upon a *believing* Mind. Now all that is there written, may be reduced to these few Heads, *Commands,*

Y

*Threat-*

Vol. I. *Threatnings, Promises, Histories, Predictions*  
 and *Affirmations*. Every one of which hath  
 its proper and peculiar way of *working* upon  
 the Minds of Men, but they all do it *effectually*  
 in those which *believe*.

Whether  
 Com-  
 mands,

I. By the *Commands*, I mean all such Mo-  
 ral Laws and Precepts which are recorded  
 in Holy Scripture as enacted by God Him-  
 self, or, which is the same, by his *Holy*  
*Spirit* in the *Prophets* and *Apostles*. All  
 which Laws have equally their Authority  
 and Sanction from the Supreme Law-giver,  
 the universal Governour of the World, who  
 hath been pleased to make and publish them,  
 that all Mankind might know how to go-  
 vern themselves, their Thoughts, their  
 Words, and their Actions, all according to  
 his Divine Will and Pleasure. Now when  
 we read or hear of any of these *Command-*  
*ments*, if at the same time we firmly *believe*  
 and are fully perswaded in our Minds, that  
 they are prescribed to us by the Almighty  
 Creator, Preserver and Disposer of all things  
 in the World, our Consciences must needs  
 be touched, and our Hearts affected with a  
 quick Sense of the many Obligations that  
 lie upon us to observe them, with an holy  
 Fear lest we should ever break them, and  
 with steady Resolutions to keep them as  
 punctually as we can. As we see in the  
 Children of *Israel*, when the Law was pro-  
 claimed.

claimed upon Mount *Sinai* with *Thundrings* and *Lightnings*, and other Demonstrations of the Divine Glory and Greatness, whereby the People were convinced, that it was indeed the Law of God, and that he himself proclaimed it; how were they terrified at it, and resolved to keep it! They desired to see no more such terrible Sights, but were ready now to do whatsoever *Moses* should tell them was the Will of God. For they said to him, *Go thou near, and hear all that the Lord our God shall say. And speak thou unto us all that the Lord our God shall speak unto thee, and we will bear it, and do it, Deut. 5. 27.* So effectually did the Word of God work in them, so long as they believed it. And so it doth in all that hear of the Laws of God, so long as they really believe them to be his. As all the *Moral Commandments* are, which we find written in the Holy Scriptures, altho' they were not promulged in such an extraordinary and astonishing Manner, as the Ten were upon Mount *Sinai*, but by the still Voice of his *Holy Spirit* in the *Prophets*: They are all equally *the Commands* of Almighty God. Which whosoever believes, when he hears them deliver'd and made known to him, he must needs receive them with that Reverence and Godly Fear, that will work up his Mind into fervent Desires,



Vol. I. and sincere Endeavours to observe and keep them. Infomuch that he who is not so wrought upon by them, may be confident, that whatsoever he may think or say, he is not fully perswaded that they are the Laws of the Supreme Judge and Governour of the World. If he was, he would soon find them *working effectually* in him.

or Threat-  
nings,

II. Especially if he considers withal, the Penalty which God hath *threatned* against those who break his Laws, nothing less than Death it self. When God commanded *Adam* not to eat of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, he told him at the same time, *that in the day that he eat thereof, he should surely die*, Gen. 2. 17. Which if *Adam* had believed, he would never have eaten of that Tree: And therefore the Serpent had no other way to prevail with him to do it, but by perswading him that *he should not die*, Gen. 3. 4. So it is to this Day. In that God was pleas'd to threaten the first Sin with Death, he thereby sufficiently declared that all Sin should be punish'd with *Death*, which the Apostle therefore saith, *is the wages of Sin*, Rom. 6. 23. of Sin in general, one as well as another. God hath threatned Death against every Sin, Death in its fullest Extent and Latitude, as comprizing under it, all the Curses and Miseries that Mankind is

is capable of. Hence it is that he denounced so many Curses, against those *who would not observe to do whatsoever he had commanded*, Deut. 28. And how exactly they were all executed upon the Children of *Israel*, may easily appear to any one that compares what *Moses* hath there written, with what *Josephus* hath recorded concerning the Destruction of *Hierusalem* by the *Romans*, in his History of the *Jewish War*; where we find all the *Curses* which are there threatned, so literally fulfill'd upon that Sinful Nation, that it may serve as a Comment upon the foresaid Text. And howsoever other People may flatter themselves for a while with the hopes of impunity for their Sins, notwithstanding that they continue in them, the Curse of God will most certainly one time or other fall upon them for it: Nay, it is upon them already. For God hath said, *Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the Book of the Law to do them*, Gal. 3. 10. Deut. 27. 26. They are already *cursed*, whether they see it or no; and they shall find they are so whether they will or no, when Christ shall say to them, *Depart from me, ye Cursed, into everlasting Fire, prepar'd for the Devil and his Angels*, Matt. 25. 41. For this we have the Word of God himself, which if Men did really  
Y 3 believe,

Vol. I.

*believe*, how *effectually* would it *work* in them! It would soon turn their Stomachs against all manner of Sin, as that which brings the *Curse* of God upon them, and so is the only Cause of all the Troubles they meet with in this World, and without sincere Repentance will ruine and destroy them for ever.

or Promises,

III. The same may be said of the *Promises* which God hath made to those who keep his Laws, which are so many and so great, that if Men did but really believe them, they would need no other Arguments to persuade them to do whatsoever he hath commanded. For to those who do so, he hath *promised* all the Good, all the best Things, yea, all Things that are in the World: *All shall be theirs*, 1 Cor. 3. 21. *And all shall work together for their Good*, Rom. 8. 28. And who can forbear to do that which he *believes* will do him good, although it be only one particular Good, and altho' he hath no other Ground to *believe* it, but because a wise and an honest Man, as he supposes, hath told him so? How much more, when the All-wise, Almighty, All-good and gracious God hath said, that *they who obey and serve Him, shall have all the good Things they can desire*, as we have all the ground that can be to *believe* it; so no Man can really *believe* it; but

but he must needs strive all he can to obey and serve Him, which whosoever doth not do, whatsoever he may pretend, I am sure he doth not truly *believe God's Word*. For *true Faith worketh by Love*, Gal. 5. 6. But *Love is the fulfilling of the whole Law*, Rom. 13. 10. Gal. 5. 14. And therefore he that doth not endeavour to the utmost of his Power, to fulfil the whole Law of God, may be confident that he doth not truly *believe* his Word, and *Promise* to them that do so. And that is the Reason, the only Reason that it hath no effect upon him.

But in those who *believe*, it works so *effectually*, that it puts them upon constant Endeavours to do whatsoever God hath commanded; it inspires them with Courage and Resolution in it; it keeps them *steadfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the Work of the Lord, forasmuch as they know that their Labour shall not be in vain in the Lord*, 1 Cor. 15. 58. They know, they are sure that all the Pains they take for him will turn to good Account for themselves. They have God's *Word* for it; the best security in the World. And therefore they never think that they can lay out too much upon it.

And as the *Word* and *Promise* of God animates and encourageth those who *believe*, to obey him in all Things which he hath

commanded; so it enables them also to put their whole Trust and Confidence on Him for all Things that He hath *promised*, that is, for all things that can any way conduce to their good and welfare. By which means, whatsoever happens, their *Hearts are always fixed, trusting in the Lord*, to defend and keep them according to his Word, which they are confident can never fail. As we see in the Apostle, God *hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee: So that we may boldly say; the Lord is my helper, I will not fear what Man shall do unto me*, Heb. 13. 5, 6. So in all the *Promises* which God hath made, they who *believe*, can boldly say that He will make them good. This is that *Faith* which is so acceptable to God that by it we are accepted of as Righteous before Him, through his beloved Son, in whom all his *Promises* are made and confirmed to us. As when God had made a Promise to *Abraham*, it is said, *Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for Righteousness*, Rom. 4. 5. Not that we can *believe*, and not do the Works of God, as I have already shewn; but because when we have done all we can, our Works are so imperfect, that we cannot be *accounted* Righteous for them: And therefore God is Graciously pleas'd to accept of our *Faith* in his *Promises*,

*mises*, and in his Son, in whom they are made; and to count that for *Righteousness* to us, in that we are thereby interested in all the Merits of our Blessed Saviour, in whom we *believe*, and by whom we are therefore justified before God. So *effectually* do the *Promises* of God work in them who *believe* and trust on them, that they are thereby both made and accounted Righteous, and so are *meet to be Partakers of the Inheritance of the Saints in Light.*

Neither doth the *Historical Part* of the Holy Scriptures, want its *Influence* and *Energy* in those who *receive* it as attested by God himself, and accordingly *believe* it. When we read there how God made the World, and what great Things he hath since done in it, if we really *believe* it, we must needs be struck with such an admiration of his Infinite Wisdom and Power, as will make us fall down and worship him; when we read or hear of the dreadful Judgments which he hath inflicted upon obstinate and notorious Sinners; if we really *believe* it, we cannot but dread the Thoughts of falling under his Displeasure, and so live in his fear all our Life-long: When we read or hear of the great Deliverances he hath wrought, and *the wonderful Works that he hath done* for his faithful People and Servants in all Ages; if we really *believe* it,

we

we shall be thereby inflamed with Holy Desires, to be in the number of his faithful Servants, and encouraged to trust on him, and to hope that he will do as much for us, if there be occasion. When we read or hear of the great Sins which the best of Men have sometimes fallen into; if we really *believe* it, our Hearts must needs be touched with the Conscience of our own Infirmities, and of the necessity of observing what the Apostle hath taught us in that Case; *Be not high-minded but fear*, Rom. 11. 20. When we read or hear of the great Troubles and Afflictions which God's own People have met with in this World; if we really *believe* it, we shall the more cheerfully undergo whatsoever he shall be pleased to lay upon us, and with *Moses, choose rather to suffer Affliction with the People of God, than to enjoy the Pleasures of Sin for a season*, Heb. 11. 25. When we read or hear of the *Vertues* and good *Works*, for which the Saints of old are commended by God himself, as that *Enoch walked with God*; That *Noah was a just Man, and perfect in his Generation*; That *Abraham was strong in Faith, giving Glory unto God*; That *Job was not only patient, but thankful for all his Troubles*; That *Moses was the meekest Man upon Earth*; That *David was a Man after God's own Heart*; That *Zacharias and Elizabeth* were

## Ministration of the Word.

331

Serm.  
X.



were both *Righteous before God, walking in all the Commandments and Ordinances of the Lord blameless*, and the like; if we really believe it, what an Emulation will it raise in us to come as near them as possibly we can? Especially, the Life and Death of our Blessed Saviour, who *did none*, and yet *suffered all manner of Evil*; if we really believe it, it would not only make us ashamed of our former Sins, but careful for the future to walk in his Steps.

But as to what is recorded concerning our *Blessed Saviour*, I shall have occasion to speak more particularly of that afterwards, as likewise of the *Prophecies or Predictions* that are not yet fulfilled. Wherefore passing by those which are fulfilled already, and so are a great Confirmation of our Faith in God's *Word*; I shall haste to the last of these Heads, to which I said, whatsoever is contain'd in it, may be refer'd, which I called Affirmations. By which I mean, whatsoever is affirm'd in the Holy Scriptures concerning God, the Father, the Son, or the Holy Ghost, or any other Truth that is there *Revealed* on purpose that we might believe it: For whatsoever is so affirmed, if we accordingly believe it, it will *work so effectually* in us, as to cleanse our Hearts from all erroneous and corrupt Opinions, and fill them with a due Sense and  
right



Vol. I.

Or Affir-  
mations.

right Notions of Divine Things, according to that of *St. Peter*, where he saith, That *God purified their Hearts by Faith*, Acts 15. 9.

IV. To make this as plain and practical as I can, that ye may not only understand but experience in your selves what *Power* this part of God's holy *Word* hath upon them who *believe*, I shall briefly run thro' the *Articles* of our *Christian Faith*, as they are contained in the *Apostles Creed*, and show how every one hath its particular Influence, and all work together to cleanse and purify the Hearts of those who *believe*, to take them off from all gross and sensible Objects, and to fix them upon God, and the Concerns of another Life. I know there are other great Truths *revealed* in the Holy Scriptures, which are not expressly named in that *Creed*. But I shall only instance in those that are there expressed: Because that is the *Creed* which I suppose you can all say, you all profess to *believe* it, and it is that which we repeat every day in our *Publick Devotions*. And therefore it will be of great use to understand how you ought to be, and how you will be affected with every *Article* that is in it, if you actually *believe* it, whensoever ye hear or say it. And by consequence, how proper it is to repeat and exercise our *Faith*, upon that *Creed* in our daily Prayers.

*First,*

## Ministration of the Word.

333

Serm.  
X.

First, therefore, *He that cometh unto God, must believe that He is*, Heb. 11. 6. and accordingly our Creed begins with, *I believe in God the Father Almighty: In God, the Lord, the Lord of Hosts, Jehovah, Jah, Being, Glory, Goodness, Purity, Excellency, Superexcellency, Perfection it self, existing in and of himself, God blessed for ever.* And who can *believe* there is such a glorious, amiable, infinite, incomprehensible, eternal Being, and not love and honour him? Who can *believe* in him, and not adore and serve him with *Reverence and Godly Fear*? It is impossible. Such a Belief of God would raise up our Hearts, and incline all the Powers of our Souls to him, and fix them so firmly upon him, that nothing would be able to withdraw them from him. And if we *believe* in God the Father, we must needs believe he hath a *Son*, eternally begotten of him, otherwise he could not be the Father, which by consequence must needs *work* so *effectually* in us, as to confirm and settle us in the *Belief* of the *Divinity* of our Blessed Saviour, and of the most glorious *Trinity*, the Foundation of our whole Religion, and of all our Hopes and Expectations from it. But if we *believe* also that this God the Father is Almighty, that he can do whatsoever he pleaseth, whensoever, wheresoever

The firm Belief of the Apostles Creed, a main Instance of the Efficacy of Faith on the Hearers of God's Word. Article I.

ever, and howsoever he pleaseth to do it; that nothing can resist his Will, all things being infinitely below him, and intirely subject to him: Who can imagine, but they who feel it, what Impressions such a *Faith* would make upon our Hearts? It would cut us to the Quick with fear of offending, and desires of pleasing God Almighty above all things in the World, as believing that nothing can do us either good or hurt, but just as he pleaseth. Especially if we go on to believe, that this *God the Father Almighty, is the Maker of Heaven and Earth*: That he made the Sun, the Moon, and all the Planets and fixed Stars, with every thing that is in them, upon them, about them, above them, or beyond them, farther than our very Thoughts can reach: That he made the Heaven of Heavens, with all the *Angels, Arch-Angels, Cherubim* and *Seraphim*, and all the pure and spotless, glorious and most perfect Creatures that reside there: That he made the *Earth*, and the *Sea*, with all things that are therein: And that he did not only thus make all things at first, but he is still, he is always the Maker of them, continually upholding them in their Being, ordering, and disposing, and governing them, as he himself sees good. Who can believe this, and not admire the *Glory* of that infinite

## Ministration of the Word.

335

Serm.  
X.

finite Wisdom, and Power, and Goodness that shineth forth in the whole Creation? Who can believe this and not cry out, *Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive Glory, and Honour, and Power, for thou hast created all things, and for thy Pleasure they are and were created, Rev. 4. 11. Allelujah, for the Lord God, Omnipotent, reigneth, let us rejoyce and be glad, and give Honour to him, Rev. 19. 6, 7. For of him, and through him, and to Him are all things, to whom be Glory for ever, Amen, Rom 11. 36.* And as we believe in God the Father Almighty, Maker of Heaven and Earth, so also in Jesus Christ his only Son our Lord: That he is Jesus, that is, as Art. II, the Name imports, *the Saviour*, the only Saviour we have in all the World; That this Jesus is *the Christ*, the Anointed of God, to be a *Priest*, a *Prophet*, and a *King*, in order to his accomplishing our Salvation: That this Jesus Christ is the only Son of God, the Only-Begotten of the Father, of the same Nature and Substance with him: And that he is the Lord of the whole World, and in a particular manner our Lord and Governour. Could we live with a constant *Belief* of all this, how happy should we then be? Then we should put our whole Trust and Confidence in *Jesus*, and in him alone, for all things necessary for our Salvation: Then we should apply  
our

Vol. I. our selves to Christ upon all Occasions, as our *Priest*, to make *Atonement* for us; as our *Prophet*, to instruct us; and as our *King*, to defend and govern us: Then the only Son of God would be our only Joy and Comfort, so that our *Souls* would always magnifie the Lord, and our *Spirits* rejoice in God our *Saviour*: Then we should submit unto the Will of Christ our Lord, and strive above all things, to serve, and please, and obey him, and so should always live under his Conduct and Protection.

Art. III. *Who*, as it follows in the Creed, was conceived by the *Holy Ghost*, born of the *Virgin Mary*; that is, who being in the Form of God, took upon him the Form of a *Servant*, or became Man too, by being conceiv'd, not in the ordinary way as other Men are, but by the *Holy Ghost* himself, and born as miraculously of a pure *Virgin*, the *Virgin Mary*, of the Stock of *David*; so that both his *Conception* and *Birth* were *supernatural* and *miraculous*, as being effected by the immediate Power of God himself. Which is such an Article of our Faith, that if firmly believed, it would make us astonished at the infinite Love of God to Mankind, that he himself should become *Man*, and for that purpose, alter the whole Course of Natural Causes which he hath settled in the World, and all to reconcile himself



himself to Mankind, and Mankind unto himself. Who can *believe* this, and not love that God who so loved us, as to be conceived by his own *Holy Spirit*, and born of a *Virgin*, and all to redeem and save us?

But how did this wonderful Person, this God-Man, *redeem* and *save* us? That we are taught in the next Words of the Creed, *He suffer'd under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, dead, and buried, he descended into Hell.* He suffer'd all the *Punishments* which the Law of God had threatned against the Sins of Men. He suffer'd *Shame* and *Reproach* in his glorious Name; He *suffer'd* Pain and Anguish in his Body; He *suffer'd* Grief and Sorrow in his Soul; This he *suffer'd* under *Pontius Pilate*, a Roman Governour, and therefore suffer'd also that cruel and accursed Death which the *Romans* inflicted upon notorious Malefactors; He was crucified, his Hands and Feet were nailed to a Cross, and there he hung 'till he gave up the Ghost and died, and so offer'd up himself as a Propitiatory Sacrifice for the Sins of the whole World; and being dead, his Body was *buried* or laid in the *Grave*, and his *Soul* went down to Hell, not to suffer there, but to shew that he had suffer'd enough already, and that the Gates of Hell could have no more

Z Power

Vol. I.

Power over him, or his. For he had now overcome the Devil, and therefore triumphed over him in his own Kingdom.

Is it possible really to *believe* all this, and yet not be affected with it? To *believe* that the Only-Begotten Son of God, suffer'd so much for our Sins, and yet continue in them? To *believe* that he was crucified for us, and yet we not *crucifie our Flesh with the Affections and Lusts*? To *believe* that he died in our stead, and yet not live to his Honour and Glory? To *believe* that he was buried, and yet we not be *buried with him by Baptism into Death*? Rom. 6. 4. To *believe* that he went down into Hell, and yet that we should walk in the ways that lead thither? That he hath overcome the Devil, and yet we should be overcome by him? It is impossible. Men may talk of what Christ suffered, and profess to *believe* it, and yet be never the better for it; but if they did what they profess, if they really *believed* that such an extraordinary Person suffered in such an extraordinary manner for Sin, yea; and for their Sins too, it must needs work in them *true Repentance, not to be repented of*. So as to make them not only ashamed of their former Sins, and heartily sorry for them, but stedfastly resolved to *walk for the future in Newness of Life*.  
They

## Ministration of the Word.

339

They would never think they can do enough for him, who hath done and suffer'd so much for them.

Serm.  
X.

But what saith our Blessed Lord in *David*, *Thou wilt not leave my Soul in Hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine holy one to see Corruption*, Psal. 16. 10. Acts 2. 31. And accordingly, though he was *crucified, dead and buried, and went down into Hell*, yet as it follows in the *Creed*, *the third day he rose again from the Dead, ascended into Heaven, sitteth on the right Hand of God the Father Almighty, from thence he shall come to judge the Quick and the Dead*. We heard before how low Christ humbled himself for us, and here we see how highly he is now exalted by the Father, and all for us too. The third day after his Soul and Body were separated upon the *Cross*, they were united together again, and so he revived or rose again to Life, and soon after went up in both so united into Heaven, and was there set *at the right Hand of God, Angels, and Authorities, and Powers being made subject to him*, 1 Pet. 3. 22. Neither was he only thus set at the right Hand of God, at his first going into Heaven, but as it is in the *Creed*; He sitteth there now, as *Head over all things to the Church*, Ephes. 1. 22. As King of Kings, and Lord of Lords, vested with absolute Authority over

Art. V. VI.  
VII.



Vol. I. *the whole Creation, and as the true High-Priest, appearing in the Presence of God, making Atonement and Reconciliation for all that believe in him, by Virtue of that Blood which he shed for the Sins of the whole World, when he was upon Earth. And that seems to be the Reason why, in the Revelations, he is all along represented as a Lamb sitting upon his Throne, because he sits there as the Lamb that offer'd up himself for the Sins of the World, and by Virtue of that one Oblation of himself once offer'd, he is continually propitiating or reconciling his Father, and so interceding with him for all his faithful People, that their Sins may be pardoned, and their Persons accepted of, or accounted Righteous before God. This he always did, is still doing at this very Moment, and so will be to the End of the World: When he will come to Earth again, and summon all Mankind that ever lived, together with those which shall be then alive, to appear before him, and will pass his final Sentence upon every one, according to that he hath done in the Body, whether it be good or evil, 2 Cor. 5. 10.*

I hope I need not tell you, that if ye *believed* all this, it would *work effectually* in you, you could not surely but feel it in your selves. For, I speak to them who *believe,*

## Ministration of the Word.

341

Serm.

X.



lieve, did not your Hearts even burn within you, while you heard what a glorious *Saviour* ye have in Heaven? Do not your Souls leap for joy, that ye have such an Advocate *ever living* to make Intercession for you? Do not you still find your selves refreshed and cheered at the hearing, that he who loved you so well as to lay down his Life for you, is now *at the right Hand of God*, and hath all things in Heaven and Earth entirely at his Command? Hath it not made you ready to praise and magnify his Name, and to join with the Choir of Heaven in singing, *Blessing, and Honour, and Glory, and Power, be unto him that sitteth upon the Throne, and to the Lamb for ever and ever*, Rev. 5. 13. And when you heard that this glorious Person will come one day to judge all Mankind, and you among the rest, did not this stir up in you good Desires and holy Resolutions to prepare your selves for that great Account you must then give to him? If you found no such *Effect* in your selves upon the hearing of these Fundamental *Articles* of our *Religion*, you may conclude, that you do not *believe* them: For if you did, you would not only have felt all that I have said, but far more than I am able to express.

Z 3

The

Vol. I.

Art. VIII.

Art. IX.

The same may be said of all the other Articles which remain. If you believed *in the Holy Ghost, the Lord, and the Giver of Life*, and of all Grace and Holiness, you could never hear of him, but you would immediately lift up your Hearts to him, to be quickned, and sanctified, or made holy by him. If you believed *the holy Catholick Church*, or the Congregation of all Christian People, without which there is no Salvation, according to that of the Apostle, *The Lord added to the Church daily such as should be saved*, Acts 2. 47. If you believed this, I say, you could never hear of Christ's Church, but it would fill your Hearts with Joy and Thankfulness to God, that you are admitted into it, and strengthen your Resolutions of living so as that you may be saved in it. If you believ'd *the Communion of Saints*; that there is a Society or Company of Persons in the World, which God himself is pleased to account real *Saints*, his own faithful Servants, his Elect and peculiar People, which he hath a special Love for, and takes particular Care of, both in this World and the next: Did you *believe* this, whensoever you hear of it, it would put you upon longing and striving all ye can to be in the Number of those blessed Souls, *Fellow-Citizens with the Saints, and of the Household of God*, Ephes. 2. 19. and so  
meet

## Ministration of the Word.

343

meet to be Partakers of the Inheritance of the Saints in Light, Col. 1. 12.

Serm.  
X.

If you believed *the Forgiveness of Sins*, Art. X. That upon your Repentance and Conversion unto God, your Sins will be all pardon'd by the Blood of Christ; every time you hear of it, it would *work* more and more upon you, to turn you *from Darkness to Light*, and from *the Power of Satan unto God*, that ye may receive *this Forgiveness of Sins, and Inheritance among them which are sanctified by Faith, that is in Christ Jesus*, Acts 26. 18.

If you believed *the Resurrection of the Body*, Art. XI. that altho' your Bodies must return to the Earth, out of which they were taken, yet they shall be raised up again to stand before Christ's Tribunal, whensoever you hear of it, it would make you more careful to live in your Bodies, so as that ye may not be afraid, either to lay them down, or take them up again.

And as for *Life everlasting*, Art. XII. if you really believ'd that *the Wicked shall go into everlasting Punishment, and the Righteous into Life eternal*, Math. 25. 46. What a mighty Change would it make in you, whensoever you hear of it? It would make you dread the Thoughts of continuing in a State of Wickedness, and resolve for the future, to devote your selves wholly to the Service

Z 4

of

of Almighty God, that when you go out of this wicked and naughty World, you may live with Christ and his holy Angels in perfect Glory and Happiness for ever.

Thus *effectually* do the plain *Articles* of our Religion work upon them that *believe*. And so doth *the whole Word* of God. As I doubt not but many here present have found by their own Experience, who when they have heard any part of it *revealed* to them, upon their *believing* and *receiving* it, as it is in truth *the Word of God*, they have felt it to be, as the Apostle saith, *Quick and powerful, and sharper than a two edged Sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of Soul and Spirit, and of the Foynts and Marrow, and a Discerner of the Thoughts and Intents of the Heart*, Heb. 4. 12. It comes upon them like Fire upon Tinder, or such combustible Matter, where it immediately catcheth and spreadeth it self all over it. Whereas, upon those who do *not believe*, it falls like a Spark into Water; it is no sooner there, but it is out. And that is the great Reason why so many hear the Word of God, and yet are never the better for it; because, whatsoever they may profess, they are not fully *perswaded* of it, they do not really *believe* it, with such a *Faith* as is due to the infallible *Word* and *Testimony* of God himself:

self: No, not so much as they *believe* what they see or hear, or is told them by *fallible Men*. And then it is no Wonder that it makes no Impression upon them. It is impossible it should, both from the Nature of the thing itself, and from the just Judgment of God upon them, for not *believing* what he himself hath said.

But let others do what they please. Let us do what we profess; even *believe* whatsoever God hath *revealed* to us in his *holy Word*; that whensoever we hear, or so much as think of it, his Grace may set it home upon our Hearts, and make it *work effectually* in us; that it may be always *profitable* to us for *Doctrine, for Reproof, for Correction, for Instruction in Righteousness, that we may be perfect, thoroughly furnish'd unto all good Works*, 2 Tim. 3. 16, 17. And for that Purpose, let us be always thinking of God's Word, and ruminatè by *Faith* so long upon it, that it may be digested into proper Food and Nourishment for our Souls, that we may *grow thereby in Grace, and in the Knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ*, 2 Pet. 3. 18. That whilst others live only by Sense, or Fancy, or at the best, by corrupt and carnal Reason, so as to be mov'd and acted only by them in every thing they do, we may for the future live by the *Faith* of the  
the

Vol. I. the Son of God, and with a constant Belief of those great Truths which he hath revealed to us, as the great Principle of our Life and Actions.

*Another Instance in a Summary of God's Word.*

What Holy and Heavenly Lives shou'd we then live? Then we shou'd repent of all our Sins, because it is written in God's Word, *That except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish*, Luke 13. 3, 5. Then we shou'd take care of every thing we do, because it is written, *God will bring every Work into Judgment, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil*, Eccles. 12. 14. Then we should refrain, not only from prophane, but idle Talk, because it is written, *That every idle word that Men shall speak, they shall give Account thereof in the Day of Judgment*, Matth. 12. 36. Then we should be humble and lowly in our own Eyes, because it is written, *God resisteth the Proud, and giveth Grace to the Humble*, 1 Pet. 5. 5. Then we should strive all we can to walk in all the Commandments of the Lord blameless, because it is written, *He that bath my Commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me; and he that loveth me, shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest my self unto him*, John 14. 21. Then we should love the World no longer, because it is written, *If any*



any Man love the World, the Love of the Father is not in him, 1 John 2. 15. Then we should never forsake the Assembling ourselves together, but should take all Opportunities of joyning in the Publick Worship of God, because it is written, *Where two or three are met together in my Name, there am I in the midst of them*, Matth. 18. 20. Then we should not be cast down at any Chastisement or Afflictions that God is pleased to lay upon us, because it is written, *Whom the Lord loveth, he chasteneth, and scourgeth every Son whom he receiveth*, Heb. 12. 6. Then we should never despair of God's Mercy in the Pardon of our Sins, because it is written, *If any Man sin, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the Righteous, and he is the Propitiation for our Sins*, 1 John 2. 1, 2. Then we should press towards the Mark for the Prize of the High Calling of God in Christ Jesus, because it is written, *To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me on my Throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his Throne*, Rev. 3. 21.

Yet, could we always live with a firm Belief of what is written in God's holy Word, we should live in the other World, while we are in this; *our Conversations would be always in Heaven*, our Thoughts and



Vol. I. and Affections would be still running up-  
 ~~~~~ on Almighty God as present with us, or  
 upon our Saviour, as interceding for us, or  
 upon the Work that He hath set us, or  
 upon the Account that we must give him  
 of it, or upon the Reward that He hath  
 promised to those who do it faithfully, or  
 upon something or other which we find there  
 written and so should steer an even Course  
 thro' all the Changes and Chances of this  
 mortal Life, till we come to the End of our  
 Faith, even the Salvation of our Souls, thro'  
 Jesus Christ our only Saviour, *to whom  
 with the Father and the Holy Ghost, be all Ho-  
 nour and Glory, now and for ever. Amen.*

Applicati-  
 on to all  
 Hearers of  
 the Word,  
 that they be  
 effectual  
 Doers of it.

Now these things being thus plainly laid  
 down before you, give me leave to deal free-  
 ly with you concerning what ye have now  
 heard, for it concerns you all very much,  
 infinitely more than any thing in this World  
 can do. You cannot surely but know, that  
*without Faith it is impossible to please God,* that  
 your Sins can never be pardon'd, nor your  
 Souls ever saved without it. Now by what  
 you have now heard, you may easily per-  
 ceive whether you have true *Faith* or no,  
 whether you *believe* the Gospel, as you are  
 there requir'd, to the Saving of your Souls.  
 For if *the Word preached,* makes no Impression  
 upon you; If you hear Sermon after Sermon,  
 as many do, to our Shame be it spoken, and  
 yet

yet be never the Wiser nor better for it; If you be not *Doers of the Word, but Hearers only, deceiving your own Souls*: you may then conclude, that notwithstanding your Profession of the Gospel, you do *not believe* it. You *believe* it no more than they who do not so much as profess it, and therefore are as yet in the same deplorable Condition with them, even in *the Gall of Bitterness, and in the Bond of Iniquity*. But if *the Word preached work effectually* in you; if it stirs up your Hearts, and strengthens your Resolutions to obey it; If it puts you upon constant and sincere Endeavours to live according as you are there taught, you have then good Ground to believe, that you do really *believe* it, and shall as certainly obtain what is there promised, as you sincerely perform what is commanded in it.

Wherefore, in the Name of Christ our Saviour, I beseech you all, not to satisfy yourselves any longer with the bare *Hearing of God's Word*. But whensoever you hear it *read or preached* to you, *receive it as it is in Truth the Word of God*, and act your *Faith* accordingly upon it, that so it may *work effectually* in you, both while you hear it, and whensoever you call it to mind again. As for Example, you have lately heard, how you ought to worship and glorify God, and how to serve him daily in his House of Prayer,

350 *The Efficacy of Faith on the, &c.*

Vol. I. yer, and often at his Holy Table: These things have been plainly deliver'd to you out of God's own Word.

Now, tho' you have hitherto seem'd not to regard God's Holy *Word*, nor so much as to believe it to be his *Word*, in that you have not done it, yet now that you are put in mind of it again, *shew your Faith by your Works*; manifest to the World, and to your own Consciencés, that you *believe* God's Word, by your constant performing the foresaid Duties, and whatsoever else you hear to be there required of you. And whenever you have the Gospel preached to you, do but receive it with Faith, and you cannot but receive Benefit and Comfort from it. Then every Sermon you hear will do you good, and you will have Cause to thank God for it. And so shall we also who preach God's Word unto you: For then we may truly say to you, as the Apostle here saith to the Thessalonians, *For this Cause also thank we God without ceasing, because when ye received the Word of God, which ye heard of us, ye receiv'd it not as the Word of Men, but as it is in Truth, the Word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.*

S E R-

---



---

# S E R M O N XI.

---

## Ministers of the Gospel, Christ's Ambassadors.

---

2 C O R. 5. 20.

*Now then we are Ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us; we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.*

**W**E live in an Age, and among a People that place a great part, if not the whole, of their Religion in *hearing Sermons*: And yet we find but few that are ever the more Religious for all they hear. Most contenting themselves with coming to Church, and continuing, or perhaps sitting down there all the while that the Prayers are read, and a *Sermon* preached, and then going home again, without ever concerning themselves any further about what they have *heard*; nor so much as thinking of it any more. And then it is

no

*Religion of many, placed in hearing Sermons.*

Vol. I. no wonder that they are never the *wiser*, nor the *better* for it. But it may justly seem a great Wonder, how it comes to pass, that the Word of God, which, of it self, *is sharper than a two-edged Sword*, should, notwithstanding, make so little Impression upon those who hear it. But though they *hear* it over and over again, they are never *pricked in their Hearts*, as St. Peter's Hearers were, nor any way touched or affected with it; but still continue just as they were, careless and unconcerned about their future State, and every thing relating to it, how plainly, how powerfully soever it is pressed upon them.

*Not as the  
the Word  
of God,  
but as  
common  
Discourse.*

This may justly seem strange to one that considers, how commonly *the Word* of God is Preached among us, both in the City and Country. But several Reasons may be assign'd for it. One of the chief is, that Men in *hearing* the Word *preached*, usually look no further than to him that *preacheth* it; taking what he saith to them as coming only from him their Fellow-Creature, a Man of like Passions with themselves, and therefore regard it no more than what is said by any other *Man*. Whereas if they really *believed* and considered, that the Word they *hear*, is the Word of God himself, and that he  
who

who *Preacheth* it, Preacheth not in his own Name but God's, and accordingly *received* it, as the *Thessalonians* did, *Not as the Word of Man, but as it is in truth, the Word of God, which effectually worketh in them that believe,* 1 *Thes.* 2. 13. They would soon find it *working effectually* also upon them. It would then come with that Power and Force upon them, that it would *cut them to the Heart,* and make them cry out as *St. Peter's* Hearers did, *Men and Brethren, what shall we do?* *Acts* 2. 37.

This therefore is that which *St. Paul,* in my Text, puts the *Corinthians* in mind of. And the better to prepare them for it, he first acquaints them in the foregoing Verses, that God hath reconciled *Mankind to himself by Jesus Christ,* and that he hath committed the *Word and Ministry* of this Reconciliation to us, the *Apostles* and their *Successors* in all Ages; that we, in his *Name,* and by his *Authority,* might publish it to the World, and persuade Men to accept of the Peace which he now offers to them, so as to be reconciled to him, as he is to them by *Jesus Christ.* And having said this, the Apostle draws this Conclusion from it, *Now then we are Ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us, we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.*

Whereas  
all Preachers of  
the Gospel  
are Divine  
Ministers,  
or Ambassadors,

A a

This

Vol. I.

As the  
Apostles  
were at  
first of  
Christ.

This is a Truth so necessary for all Christians to know, that it is the first thing that *St. Paul* put those he wrote to in mind of in all his Epistles, (which he wrote as from himself only, without joyning any other with him) beginning them with saying, *Paul the Apostle of Jesus Christ*, or *Paul called to be an Apostle*, or the like; that they to whom he wrote might know, that he did not write to them as a private Person, but as an *Apostle of Jesus Christ*, that is, as the Word signifies a *Legate* or *Messenger* of Christ, sent and empower'd by him to write: That so they might receive what he was about to write to them, not as coming from him, but from *Christ* himself; an *Apostle* being in effect the same with an *Ambassador*. But foreseeing that this Name would in process of Time be appropriated only to the Twelve, and such as were called immediately by *Christ* himself, as he and some others were; therefore in my Text, speaking not only of these, but of such also as should succeed them in any part of their *Apostolical* Office in all Ages, he alters the Phrase, not saying, we are *Apostles*, but we are *Ambassadors* for Christ. A Word, that is commonly known to signify such as are sent by a Prince to a Foreign Country, to Treat in his Name, about Matters of State,

State, as particularly about Peace and War. And so *Christ* himself useth the Word, where, speaking of a King going to make War with another King, he saith, that he *sits down first, and consults whether he be able to meet him or no: Or else, while the other is a great way off, he sendeth an Ambassage, and desireth Conditions of Peace,* Luke 14.

Serm.  
XI.

32. So here, although Almighty God can meet with us when he pleaseth, and we are no way able to withstand him; yet howsoever he is graciously pleased to send some Men to Treat with others in his Name about Peace with him, to acquaint them with the easie Conditions that he hath made and expects from them, and to assure them that upon their Performance of the said Conditions, he will be reconciled to them, and at *Peace* with them: And therefore all who are thus Sent or Commissioned by him, to act in his Name, are properly called *Ambassadors*; and, as the Apostle here saith, *Ambassadors for Christ*, or in the place and stead of *Christ*. As it was he that procured this Peace for Mankind, so he is the chief Manager of all Things relating to it; therefore called, *the Angel*; or, as we translate it, *the Messenger of the Covenant*, Mal. 3. 1. Because he was sanctified and sent by the Father, *to Publish and declare it to the World*, John 6. 57.

And Christ  
of God.



Chap. 8. 29. Chap. 10. 36. And did it so faithfully, that before he went out of the World, he could truly say unto the Father, *I have manifested thy Name unto the Men which thou gavest me out of the World,— I have given unto them the Words which thou gavest me: And they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed, that thou didst send me,* John 17. 6, 8. Where we may likewise observe, that like a wise and faithful *Ambassador*, he kept strictly to the Instructions, and to the very Words which the Father had given him; in whose Name he professeth that he came, and spake and acted all along while he was upon Earth, *John 5. 43. Chap. 8. 38. Chap. 10. 25.*

Wherefore Jesus Christ being the *Mediator* between God and Men, and as such, having *all Power given him in Heaven and Earth* for the transacting the great Business of Reconciliation between them; when he was about to leave the Earth, as Man, and go up to Heaven, to reside there as our Advocate with the Father, he *delegated* some Men to supply his Place upon Earth, and to carry on the great Work which he had begun among Men: These he called his *Apostles* or *Ambassadors*, because they were *sent* by him, and empowered

empowered to Act in his Name and Stead, and according to the *Instructions* that he gave them. Which, that the World in all Ages might be fully assured of, he order'd the Commission which he granted them to be recorded, *John 20.* Where it is written, That the same Day on which he rose from the Dead, in the Evening, he came to them where they were assembled, and when he had convinced them that he was the same Person that had been Crucified three Days before, by shewing them his Hands and Feet that were nailed to the Cross, he then said unto them again, *Peace be unto you. As my Father sent me, even so send I you. And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost; whosesoever Sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them, and whosesoever Sins ye retain, they are retained, Ver. 21, 22, 23.*

Serm.  
XI.  
The Commission given to Ministers, as Ambassadors of Christ,

Where we may observe, that he sent them after the very same manner as the Father had sent him. *As my Father, saith he, sent me, even so send I you.* And therefore as the Father had sent him by Anointing him with the Holy Ghost, for the Office he was to perform. *Isa. 61. 1. Luke 4. 18. Acts 10. 38.* which was signified by the Spirit descending like a Dove, and lighting upon him, when he was Baptized, and so inaugurated

Vol. I. into the said Office: Even so, he sent his Apostles; for *he breathed on them*, and saith, *Receive ye the Holy Ghost*; the Holy Ghost proceeding from him as it doth from the Father: When Christ breathed upon his Apostles, he thereby *anointed them with the Holy Ghost and with Power*, to execute the Office which he now committed to them. And that they might know, that this was designed not only for them, but for all that should *succeed* them in the said Office to the End of the World, when he afterwards gave them his Instructions for the Execution of it, he said to them, *Lo, I am with you always, even to the End of the World*, Mat. 28. 20. From whence the *Apostles* clearly understanding that their Office was to continue to the End of the World, they took care to confer it upon others; by *laying their hands* upon them, and so transferring to them of the same Spirit which they had received from Christ, the same way that *Moses* had done it by God's own Appointment to *Joshua*, Numbers 27. 18, 23. And therefore such upon whom they laid their hands, are said to be sent by the *Holy Ghost*, particularly *Paul* and *Barnabas*, Acts 13. 4. And the same *St. Paul* tells the Elders of *Ephesus*, upon whom he had laid his hands, that the *Holy Ghost* had made them Bishops  
or

The same  
with that  
of the Apo-  
stles.

## Christ's Ambassadors.

359

Serm.  
XI.

or Overseers, Acts 20. 28. And put Timothy in mind of the Gift of God which was in him by the laying on of *his hands*, 2 Tim. 1. 6. Thus the Holy Ghost, which the Apostles received immediately from Christ himself, hath been handed down from them to others, and so to others successively to this Day, and will be to the End of the World. And all such on whom they who regularly succeed the Apostles in their whole Office, lay their hands with an intention to confer the *Holy Ghost*, as in the Ordination of Priests among us; they also receive such a Measure of it, whereby they are qualified and *commission'd* to Act in Christ's Name and Stead, in the Administration of the Word and Sacraments, as the Apostles themselves did; and therefore are properly Ambassadors for Christ, as they were. And Christ is as really *with them*, as he was with his first Apostles, in the Execution of their Office in all Ages, according to the Promise he made them, of being *with them always even to the End of the World*.

It was necessary to make this as plain as I could in few Words; that ye may understand how we came to be *Ambassadors* for Christ, as the Apostle here speaks, so as to act in *his Name* and by *his Commission*, without which nothing we do can

Vol. I.  
 ~~~~~  
*None are  
 Christ's  
 Ministers,  
 but such  
 who are  
 so com-  
 mission'd.*

signify any thing. Any Man may read the Scriptures, or make an Oration to the People, but it is not that which the Scriptures call *Preaching the Word* of God, unless he be sent by God to do it. *For how can they preach except they be sent?* Rom. 10. 15. A Butcher might kill an Ox or a Lamb, as well as the *High Priest*; but it was no *Sacrifice* to God, unless one of his *Priests* did it. *And no Man taketh this Honour to himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron,* Heb. 5. 4. Any Man may Treat of Publick Affairs as well as an *Ambassador*; but he cannot do it to any purpose, without a *Commission* from his Prince. As suppose a Foreign Nation should set up one among themselves to make a League with *England*, what would that signify, when he is not *Authoriz'd* by the King to do it? And yet this is the Case of many among us, who, as the Apostle foretold, cannot *endure sound Doctrine, but after their own Lusts heap to themselves Teachers, having itching Ears,* 2 Tim. 4. 3. But such Teachers as Men thus heap to themselves, howsoever they may tickle their *itching Ears*, they can never touch their Hearts. For that can be done only by the *Power* of God, accompanying and assisting his own *Institution* and *Commission*. Infomuch, that if I did not think, or rather

ther was not fully assured, that I had such a *Commission* to be an *Ambassador* for Christ, and to act in his *Name*; I should never think it worth the while to Preach or Execute any *Ministerial Office*. For I am sure, that all I did would be null and void of it self, according to God's ordinary way of working; and we have no ground to expect *Miracles*. But blessed be God, we in our Church, by a successive Imposition of Hands, continued all along from the Apostles themselves, receive the same *Spirit* that was conferr'd upon them for the Administration of the Word and Sacraments ordained by our Lord and Master, and therefore may do it as effectually to the Salvation of Mankind as they did. For as they were, so are we *Ambassadors for Christ*.

The Ministers of the establish'd Church, are so commission'd, and Ambassadors of Christ;

As though God did beseech you by us, or, as the words may be render'd, As if God did call upon you by us; by us, as he did by Christ, whose *Ambassadors* we are, and *Proxies* in Things pertaining unto God. So that God who at sundry times and in divers manners, spake in time past unto the Fathers by the Prophets, and hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, Heb. 1. 1. He still continues to speak by those whom his Son hath sent to speak in his Name. As the Son himself said to his *Apostles*, and in them to all that should regularly

Vol. I.



Whilst they  
preach his  
Word,

regularly succeed them; *It is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaketh in you*, Mat. 10. 20. Whatsoever we speak according to the Instructions which Christ our Master hath given us, *it is in truth the Word of God*, 1 Thes. 2. 13. It is God that speaketh by us. According to that of *David, The Spirit of the Lord spake by me, and his Word was in my Tongue*, 2 Sam. 23. 2. For we speaking only what Christ our Lord spake before us, and speaking it only in his *Name*, and by his *Authority*, as what he spake was the *Word of God*, so is that which we speak too: For we speak, or, as it were, repeat it only after him, as his *Ambassadors*, sent by him to speak it in his place and stead.

And therefore, it follows in the Text, *we pray you in Christ's stead*: As if Christ himself was here present. For he being now, as to his Body in Heaven, he sends his *Ministers* or *Ambassadors* to represent him, and supply his Place upon Earth, and to do in his Name what he himself did when he was here, and would still do if he was now present in Body, as he is by his Spirit and Power; according to the foresaid *Promise*, which he made to his *Apostles* and *Ambassadors* in all Ages, *Lo, I am with you always even to the end of the World*: And according to what he told them



them upon another Occasion, saying, *He that heareth you, heareth me: And he that despiseth you, despiseth me: And he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me,* Luke 10. 16. Whereby he plainly signified what he afterwards told them in express Terms, that, *As the Father sent him, so he sent them as his Ambassadors to Treat in his Name: And that as the Persons of Ambassadors are always reckoned Sacred and Inviolable; so what an Ambassador doth in the Name of his Prince, is look'd upon as done by the Prince himself: And as an Affront offer'd to an Ambassador, reflects on the Prince that sent him; so whatsoever is done to the Ministers or Ambassadors of Christ as such, is done to Christ himself. They who hear them, hear him, and they who despise them, despise him; as they who despise him, whom the Father sent, despise the Father who sent him.*

*They are not to be contemned under the Penalty of God's Indignation.*

From hence therefore ye may see, how truly the Apostle here saith: *We pray you in Christ's stead,* and how necessary it is for you to hearken to what we say in his Name, lest ye be found in the number of those who *despise Christ,* together with the Doctrine that he teacheth, and the Advice that he gives you by us: For it is *in his stead* we pray you. But what do we pray you *in his stead* to do? Nothing but

*Whoso despiseth Ministers as such, despiseth Christ:*



but what is really for your good: Nothing but what tends to your Eternal Happiness and Welfare, and therefore nothing but what it is your interest to do, whether we pray'd you to do it, or no. For seeing Christ came into the World for no other End, but to make you happy; and hath done and suffer'd so much as he hath for that only purpose; ye cannot imagine that he by us, or we from him, should *pray you* to do any thing but what is indispensibly necessary in order to your attainment of true Felicity. And altho' we do not command, but only *pray you in Christ's stead*; yet it being *in his stead we pray*, ye ought to give the same deference to it, as if we commanded you. The *Request* of an earthly Prince, is taken by his faithful Subjects as a *Command*: How much more when the King of Kings, and Lord of Lords, is pleased to condescend so far as to make a *Request* to you? That surely is to be received as the highest sort of *Commanding*, in that it doth not only signify his Will, but also lays a fresh Obligation upon you to observe it, seeing he is graciously pleased to deal so gently and kindly with you, in such a way as that your Obedience to him may be your own voluntary Act: Not being forced into it only by his peremptory Command, but drawn with the Bands of Love.

Love

Love indeed! The highest that can be shewn you. For after all, what is it that we thus pray you in Christ's stead? Nothing else but to be reconciled to God, *We pray you, saith the Apostle, in Christ's stead, Be ye reconciled to God.* One would think, there was no great need that such a *Request* should be made to you, much less that it should be made in no less a Name than *his* that made and governs the World. For, who would not of his own accord *be reconciled* to God, if he might? If Men would but consult their own real Interest, this certainly would be the first thing they would all strive after. And yet God knows there are but few that do it: And therefore, out of his infinite Love and Mercy, he is pleased to send his *Ambassadors* one after another, *rising up early*, and sending them to call upon Men, and to pray them in his Name to do it. And he hath *sent me* this Day to make the same Request and Prayer to you, even that ye would be *reconciled* to him.

Serm. XI.

For to Ministers is committed the Word of Reconciliation.

But that ye may fully understand what it is that I *pray you* in Christ's stead to do, and likewise how ye may do it aright, ye must take notice, that *by Nature* ye are all *the Children of Wrath*, one as well as another, *Ephes. 2. 3.* For he that made you, is angry with you, for not answering his

End

The Notion of Reconciliation with God, explain'd.

Vol. I. End in making you, which was *to serve and glorify him*, in obeying and observing the Laws which he for that purpose hath set you. Whereas ye have all broken his said Laws, and so instead of *glorifying*, ye have dishonoured him through the whole Course of your Lives, and therefore are justly fallen under his Displeasure. But he notwithstanding hath been graciously pleased to find out, and put you into a way of *being reconciled* to him: Not by suffering your Sins to go unpunish'd, but by not imputing them to you, but laying the Punishments which were due unto him for them, upon another, even upon his Only-Begotten Son, as the Apostle here acquaints us from him, saying, *For he hath made him who knew no Sin, to be Sin for us, or an Offering for our Sins*; that is, as the Prophet expresseth it, *He hath laid on him the Iniquity of us all*, Isa. 53. 6. And his Only-Begotten Son having thus born the Punishments which his Justice required for our Sins, he is now ready to extend his Mercy to us, and to receive us again into his Favour, upon such easy Terms and Conditions, that it is our own Fault, unless we perform them, so as to be *reconciled* again to God.

For all that is required on your Parts, is only to *repent and believe the Gospel*, Mark 1. 15. This was all that our Lord  
 himself

himself called upon Mankind to do, when he first entred upon his *Ministry*, and the Substance of all that he taught afterwards, and commanded his Apostles to Teach. He himself saith, That he came to call Sinners to Repentance, Luke 5. 32. And told his Disciples, That Repentance, and Remission of Sins should be preached in his Name among all Nations, Luke 24. 47. First Repentance, and then Remission of Sins; but both in his Name, and among all Nations, that all might believe in him for it. And accordingly, when the People desir'd to know of St. Peter, and the rest of the Apostles what they should do, St. Peter said unto them, Repent and be Baptized every one of you in the Name of Jesus Christ for the Remission of Sins, Acts 2. 38. They must not only repent, so as to forsake their former Superstitions and Vices of all sorts, but they must also believe in Jesus Christ; so as to be Baptized in his Name, and become his Disciples indeed, believing and practising all that he hath taught them before they could be reconciled to God so as to have their Sins pardoned. This is that which Christ himself also gave in charge to his Apostles, at the same time that he sent them out as his Ambassadors into the World: Go ye, saith he, and teach, or rather make, all Nations Disciples,

Vol. I. Disciples, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: And lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the World, Matth. 28. 19, 20. These are the Instructions which he gave them and their Successors, together with their Commission to be his Ambassadors to the End of the World. He requires them to go and call upon all Nations to become his Disciples, and to make them so by Baptizing them according to his Institution, In the Name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost: And then to teach them to observe not only some, but all things whatsoever he hath commanded, whether with his own Mouth, or else by his Prophets, Apostles, or other Holy Men of God, who spake as they were moved by his Holy Spirit.

Exhortation to a Reconciliation with God.

These therefore being the Orders and Instructions which Jesus Christ, the Lord and Saviour of Mankind, hath given to all whom he sends and employs as his Ambassadors upon Earth; In his Name and in his Stead, I pray and beseech all here present, to come up to the Terms which he hath made for your Reconciliation to God. Repent, repent of all your former Sins. You cannot but all know, every one, the Sins that he hath hitherto been guilty of, and is still addicted to.

If

If ye do but look into your own Hearts and Lives, you cannot but see, how little Good, and how much Evil you have done since ye came into the World. You cannot but be conscious to your selves, that you have often transgressed the Laws and Commandments of Almighty God, who sent you hither, by doing what ye ought not to do, and by not doing what ye ought; and so have broken also that solemn Vow and Promise which ye made to God, when ye were Baptized, and made the Members and Disciples of *Jesus*, and are still apt to do so one way or other every Day.

Now therefore I pray you in Christ's Stead break off your Sins, all your Sins, by Repentance and Amendment of Life. *Let not Sin reign any longer in your mortal Body, that ye should obey it in the Lusts, thereof: But mortifie the Deeds of the Body, and destroy the ill Habits ye have contracted by a long Continuance in any Sort of Vice or Wickedness. Set your selves in good earnest, upon denying Ungodliness and Worldly Lusts, and to live soberly, righteously and godly in this present World. Take heed that your Hearts be never over-charged with Surfeiting and Drunkenness, or the Cares of this Life. Be Just and Righteous in all your Dealings, and if ye have wronged any Man, be sure to make him Restitution.*

B b

As

*As ye have Opportunity, do good unto all Men, especially to them that are of the Household of Faith; and whatsoever ye would that Men should do unto you, even so do ye unto them. Love the Lord your God with all your Hearts, and with all your Souls: Pray without ceasing, and in every Thing give Thanks unto him: Sanctifie his Holy Name, and make him your only Fear and Dread. Live with a constant Dependance upon his Word, and Submission to his Will. Acknowledge him in all your Ways, honour him with all your Substance, serve and worship him with Reverence and Godly Fear. Let your Hearts be always running after him, your Spirits rejoicing in him, and your whole Souls be reconciled and inclined to him, and to those Holy Ways that he hath prepared for you to walk in. Study all ye can to promote his Glory, in your several Places and Stations in the World. And for that purpose, Cease to do evil, learn to do well, and whatsoever ye do in Word or Deed, do all in the Name of the Lord Jesus. Believe on him as your only Saviour, Mediator and Advocate with the Father, who ever liveth to make Intercession for those who come unto God by him: And therefore as you thus truly repent of all your Sins, and come unto God by him, trust also and depend upon him to make your Peace with God;*

God; nothing doubting but that he will intercede so effectually for you, that for his Sake, and upon the Account of his Merits and Mediation for you, your Sins being all pardon'd, God will be reconciled to you, and you shall be *reconciled* to God, and restor'd to his Love and Favour again, as much as if ye had never offended him in all your Lives.

Serm:  
XI.

Having thus *pray'd you* in Christ's Stead, and for the most part in his very Words, to be *reconciled* to God, it may seem needless to use any Arguments to persuade you to it; for if ye will not hearken to what Christ Himself desires of you, much less will you regard any thing that I can say unto you. But in this also I shall not speak in my *own* Name, but *His*; and in his *Stead pray you* to consider, first, who it is that desires this of you: Not I your Fellow-Worm, but *Christ* Himself; *Christ*, the Eternal Son of God, the Only-Begotten of the Father, the Lord God Almighty: *Christ, who being in the Form of God, thought it no Robbery to be equal to God, and yet for your Sakes made Himself of no Reputation, and took upon him the Form of a Servant: Christ, who being thus found in Fashion as a Man, really and truly Man as well as God, became obedient unto Death, even the Death of the Cross, and all to ap-*

For Christ  
his sake



pease the Wrath of God, and reconcile him to you: *Christ*, who is now at the Right Hand of the Father, and is made Head over all things for the Church, that nothing may hinder their *Reconciliation* to God, who apply themselves to him, and do what he requires in order to it. This is that *Christ*, who requires you to do what ye have now heard. And will ye not do any thing ye can for him, who hath *done* and *suffer'd* so much for you? For him who lov'd you so as to *lay down his own Life* for you? Surely you can never deny him any thing, much less when he desires nothing of you, but only that you would be *reconciled* to God. This is the only End of all he did for Mankind upon Earth, the End of all that he is now doing in Heaven, and the End of his sending *me* at this time to solicit, and pray you in his Stead to do it. And if ye still stand out and refuse to come in upon his most Gracious Advice and Request, what Favour can ye ever expect from him? None, certainly! He will be so far from shewing you any Kindness, so far from saving you from your Sins, and from the Wrath of God, that he hath told you beforehand what he will say to you; *Because I have called and ye refused, I have stretched out my Hand, and no Man regarded; but ye have set at nought all my Counsel,*

*Counsel, and would none of my Reproof, I also will laugh at your Calamity, I will mock when your Fear cometh,* Prov. i. 24, 25, 26.

Serm.  
XI.

*The danger  
of delaying  
a Reconciliation  
with God.*

And your Calamity will most certainly come ere long, whether ye fear it or no; greater Calamity than ye are aware of, greater than ye can yet imagine. For consider in the next Place, that until ye are reconciled to God, as you are Enemies to him, so he is an Enemy to you: He that made you is angry with you, he is incensed against you. And who can imagine the dismal Effects and Consequents of his Displeasure? *If his Wrath be kindled, yea but a little,* who is able to stand before it? The Thoughts of it are sufficient to make the stoutest Heart amongst us tremble. To have *Jehovah*, the Lord of Hosts, the Supreme Governour of the World; To have him angry with us, who can think of it without Horror and Amazement? Who then can describe the deplorable Condition which they are in, that lie under his Displeasure? For my part, I am so far from being able to give you a Description, that I dread the very Thoughts of it. Only we know in general, that *it is a fearful thing to fall into the Hands of the Living God*; That all that he continues to be angry at, will most certainly do so, and by Consequence be as miserable as it is possible for them to be.

B b 3

For

Vol. I. For so long as He who governs all Things in the World is angry with you, there is nothing in it can do you good, nothing but what will contribute some way or other to your Ruin and Destruction. All Things are *curst* to you, those also which you think to be *Blessings*. And all the Judgments that God hath threatned in his Word against Sinners, seeing he is angry with you, stand ready every Moment to fall upon you. And if he should once open your Eyes, to see him frowning upon you, you would not be able to endure yourselves, but would wish with all your Souls, you could cease to be, or be any thing rather than what you are, *the Vessels of Wrath fitted for Destruction*. But all in vain. All the World cannot help you, unless he that made and governs it be *reconciled* to you; but ye must be punished with *everlasting Destruction from the Presence of the Lord, and from the Glory of his Power, when he shall come to be glorified in his Saints, and admired in all them that believe in that day*, 2 Theff. 1. 9, 10. When ye will be cast into Hell-fire, *Where the Worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched*, Mark 9. 44.

If these things were laid to your Hearts as they ought to be, they would make you very restless and uneasy, until you have made your Peace with God, and done all that

that ye have heard to be requir'd in order to you *Reconciliation* to him. And How happy would you then be? As happy in the Love and Favour of God, as the other are miserable under his Wrath and Fury. For when you are at peace with God, all things else will be at peace with you. He that made them, will make them to be so: *You shall be in league with the Stones of the Field, and the Beasts of the Field shall be at peace with you,* Job 5. 23. *Yea, when a Man's ways please the Lord, he maketh his Enemies to be at peace with him,* Prov. 16. 7. And not only they, but all things else shall work together for your Good, so long as ye continue in his Favour, who governs and disposeth of all things as he pleaseth. For when ye are *reconciled to him*, he will look upon you as his Friends, his Favourites, his Children, and will deal accordingly with you. He will take you into his own particular Care and Conduct. He will *hide you under his Wings*, that no Evil may come near to hurt you. He will bless and sanctifie all Occurrences to you. He will provide all things necessary, that as you have nothing that is evil, so ye may want nothing that is good for you. He will cause *the Light of his Countenance to shine upon you*, and manifest his special Love and Favour to you, that

The Happiness of being reconciled to God.

Vol. I. you may see him smiling upon you, rejoicing over you, and delighting to do you good: In which blessed Sight our Happiness chiefly consisteth. He will guide you by his Counsel, assist you by his Grace, protect you by his Power, enlighten, quicken, actuate, support, and strengthen you by his Holy Spirit, that you may pass thro' all *the Changes and Chances of this mortal Life*, so as to come at last to live with him and his holy Angels, in the perfect Vision and Fruition of his eternal God-head.

But what do I mean, to offer at describing the Happiness of those who are *reconciled* to God? When to be in his Favour, is itself the greatest Happiness that a Creature is capable of, and such as none can apprehend but they who have it. Yet this is that Happiness which the Eternal Son of God hath purchased for Mankind, and sends his *Ambassadors* about to invite them to it. It is in *his Name* I come to all that are here present at this time, and *pray you in his stead, Be ye all now reconciled unto God*; Now, while ye may. Blessed be God, ye all may as yet be *reconciled* to Him, if ye will but take the Course for it, which hath been now described to you out of his Holy Word. Otherwise, He would not have sent me to call upon you, nor brought you

you

you hither to be called upon to do it; but if ye turn your Backs, and refuse or neglect to hearken to Him now, ye know not whether He will ever call upon you any more. Wherefore I pray you again *in his stead*, put off this great Work no longer, but begin it now. *For why will ye die? Why will ye destroy your selves, when ye need not? Why will ye continue any longer under the Displeasure of Almighty God, when ye may be restored to his Favour, if ye will but seek it? But then ye must seek it in his own, in the constant Use of the Means which He hath appointed, whereby to obtain his Grace and Assistance, to do what is requir'd of you. What they are ye all know: And therefore I need say no more. But as I have now prayed you in Christ's stead, to be reconciled to God so in his Name I pray God to be reconciled to you, and to open your Eyes that ye may see the things that belong to your everlasting Peace, before they be hid from you.*

S E R.

---



---

## S E R M O N XII.

---

### *The Sacerdotal Benediction in the Name of the Trinity.*

---

2 COR. xiii. 14.

*The Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the  
Love of God, and the Communion of the  
Holy Ghost, be with you all.*

**I**T would be great rashness in us who know so little of our own, to enquire into the Nature of Him that made us, any further than He himself hath been pleased to make it known unto us in his Holy Word. But it would be the height of Impudence and Presumption to offer at explaining the

*The Mystery* incomprehensible Mystery of the most Glorious Trinity; How Three distinct Persons subsist in the same individual Nature, so as to be all one and the same God. It is sufficient for us to believe what is written, that there is but One Living and True God; that

*The Mystery  
of the Tri-  
nity inex-  
plicable.*

that *the Lord our God is one Jehovah*, one Being, the Lord, *Deut. 6. 4.* That the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, these Three are one Being, one Jehovah, one God: That the Father is of himself, the Son of the Father, the Holy Ghost of the Father and the Son, and yet none before or after other: none greater or less than another; but the whole three Persons co-eternal together and co-equal. This we are bound to believe, because it is revealed by God himself, and therefore revealed by Him, that we may believe it upon His Word, altho' it be above the reach of our finite Understandings, as He himself knows it is: And therefore doth not require us to *understand*, but to *believe* it; and hath made known as much of it as he thought good, for that purpose only, that we might *know* what He would have us to *believe* concerning it.

Now, one very remarkable thing reveal'd in the Holy Scriptures concerning the most Glorious Trinity, is this, That the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, although they be all one and the same God, yet they often exert and manifest Themselves and Their Divine Perfections severally, as well as jointly, and so have their several ways of Working in the World: As appears from many places, and particularly from the Words I have now read; *The Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ*

What is revealed thereupon,



Vol. I. *Christ, and the Love of God, and the Communion of the Holy Ghost be with you all.* For here we have *three* Divine Persons distinctly named: The *Son*, called the *Lord, Jesus Christ*; the *Father*, here called in an especial manner *God*, as being the *Root* and *Fountain* of the Deity, as the *Primitive Writers* stile him; and then here is the *third* Person, expressly called *the Holy Ghost*. And to each of these Persons, here is a several Property or Perfection attributed, the *Apostle* wishing to the *Corinthians*, the *Grace of one*, the *Love of another*, and the *Communion of the third*; which does not only shew that they are *three* distinct Persons or Subsistences, but also that they have distinct Operations, or their several ways of Working, and manifesting themselves in the World. Which if rightly understood, would give us great light into what we ought to believe concerning each Person; and how we ought to exercise our Faith upon all and every one of them, according to the Discoveries which they are pleased to make of themselves; with respect to us. And therefore I shall endeavour to explain it as clearly as I can, being a Matter of so high a nature: Humbly beseeching Him, of whom I speak, so to assist and direct me, that I may say nothing but what is agreeable to His Holy Word, and becoming His Divine Majesty.

For

Three Properties or Perfections of the three Persons, by which they are manifested.

For this purpose therefore, we must, *First*, consider in general, that this Almighty, most Glorious and Eternal Being, which we call God, the *Father*, the *Son*, and the *Holy Ghost*, hath been graciously pleased to shew forth and manifest Himself and His Divine Perfections many wonderful ways, particularly in the Creation and Redemption of the World. In the first he manifested his Infinite *Wisdom*, *Power*, and *Goodness*; in the other His Infinite *Love*, and *Justice*, and *Mercy*, and *Truth* to Mankind: In both the Infinite Glory of His Eternal Godhead. And it is much to be observed, that in both these great Works that He hath done, whereby to set forth His Glory, we find *three* distinct Persons specified or particularly named by Himself, as concurring in the doing of them, and each in a way peculiar to Himself, The Account that He himself hath given us of His Creation or Production of all things out of Nothing, begins thus, *In the Beginning God created the Heaven and the Earth.* Where the word in the Original אלהים which we translate God, is of the Plural Number; but it is joynd with a Verb of the Singular, as it is almost every-where in the *Old Testament*. Now although I will not say, that an Argument can be drawn from hence to convince a Gain-sayer, that there are just *three* Persons

Serm. XII.

Trinity in Unity manifested at the Creation.

Vol. I. Persons in the Godhead, because a word of the Plural Number may possibly signifie more: Yet seeing that in *Hebrew*, where there is likewise a Dual, *Three* is the first Plural Number: And seeing the *first* must in reason be preferr'd before all other: And seeing God himself hath in many places of His Word acquainted us that there are *three Persons* and no more in his Godhead; we may reasonably from hence infer, that God calleth himself by this Name of the Plural, and joyns it with Verbs and Adjectives of the Singular Number, on purpose to put us in mind of the *Trinity* in *Unity* that He is *Three* in *One*, and that every one of these Divine Persons is to be adored and worshipped alike; that being, as I take it, the true notion of the word. For though the Root from whence אֱלֹהִים *Eloah* comes, be not preserv'd in the *Hebrew* Tongue, it is in the *Arabick* Dialect. Where اَللّٰه *Al-laha*, signifies to Worship or Adore: And accordingly אֱלֹהִים *Eloah*, signifies one that is to be *worshipped*: And in the Plural Number אֱלֹהִים *Elohim*, *Persons* adorable, such as are and ought to be *worshipped* by all things that are, as He, to be sure, ought to be, by whom all things were made, and were made by Him for that End, that He might be *worshipped* by them. And it is very observable, that in the next Chapter, when

when the Creation was finished, he is called by two names, יהוה אלהים, the one of the Singular Number, the other of the Plural; the one signifying his *Essence*, the other the *Persons* subsisting in it. But in all the first Chapter of *Genesis*, while He was doing this Great Work, He is not so much as once called by any other name than אלהים *Adorandi*, or *Adorabiles*, Persons to be *adored*; but by that He is called above thirty times in that one Chapter: Whereby I humbly conceive He hath signified his pleasure to us, that when we consider his Creation of the World, we should ascribe it to all the *three Persons*, and *adore* them for it. And indeed that they were all concern'd in it, appears from the History of the Creation itself: Wherein although the Creator, as I have shewn, be all along called אלהים, *Elohim*, *Divine Persons* in the Plural Number; yet that name being as constantly there joyn'd with a Verb of the Singular Number; the *Unity* of the Divine Nature or Godhead, is likewise signified by it. In which sense it is said in the second Verse: *And the Spirit of God moved upon the Face of the Waters*: that is, the Spirit of that *One God* who is *Elohim Divine Persons*; Of which the Spirit here spoken of must needs be one, forasmuch as He operates in the *Creation*, which none but God  
the

Vol. I. the Creator could do. So that we have here *two* distinct Persons; the Spirit of God, and God himself, whose *Spirit* He is, even *the Father*, who, as I observed before, is in an especial manner often called God.

After this we read, that God made all things by his *Word*. *He said let there be Light, and there was Light*, v. 3. and so He made his Works all the six Days, until He came to make Man, He made them all by his *Word*: Not by any outward *Word* spoken, but by speaking in himself, by willing them to be, and so by his inward, his essential *Word*; that is, by his Eternal and Only-begotten Son, as we are fully assured by his Evangelist St. *John*; who by his direction begins the Gospel of his Son *Jesus Christ*, with this Character of Him: *In the Beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the Beginning with God. All things were made by Him, and without Him was not any thing made that was made*, John 1. 1, 2, 3. And to the same purpose St. *Paul* speaking of the Son of God, saith, *By Him were all things created that are in Heaven, and that are in the Earth, visible or invisible; whether they be Thrones or Dominions, or Principalities, or Powers: All things were created by Him,*  
and

*in the Name of the Trinity.*

385

Serm.  
XII.

and for Him, Col. 1. 16. Eph. 3. 9. And elsewhere, *By whom He made the Worlds,* Heb. 1. 2. From all which it appears, that the *Word* by which God made the World, was his only *Son*, then with Him. If his *Son*, then a *Person*, and if *with Him*, then a *distinct* Person from him. So that now we plainly see *Three* distinct Persons manifesting Themselves in the *Creation* of the World, God the *Father*, his *Son* and his *Spirit*. As the Royal Prophet also long ago observed, saying, *By the Word of the Lord were the Heavens made, and all the Host of them by the Breath (or Spirit) of his mouth,* Psal. 33. 6.

To this we may add that remarkable Passage which occurs in the Formation of Man, as both explaining and confirming all that hath been hitherto said. For upon the sixth or last Day of the Creation, when God was pleased to make Man, it is written; *And God said, let us make Man in our Image, after our Likeness,* Gen. 1. 26. In the Original it is, וַיֹּאמֶר אֱלֹהִים, And God in the Plural Number, said, in the Singular, he said, let *Us* make Man; and let *Us* make him in *Our* Image, after *Our* Likeness; still in the Plural Number. Which shews us plainly as words can do it, that several *Persons* concurred in this great Work; and that they had all one

C c and

Vol. I.

against  
Jews and  
Socinians.

and the same *Image* and *Likeness*, and therefore were of *one* and the same *Nature* or *Essence*. Neither can the words possibly bear any other sense. All that the *Jews* and *Socinians* have said upon them according to their blasphemous Doctrine, makes them downright nonsense; whereas, according to our Christian Doctrine, nothing is more plain and easie. For when the most Blessed *Trinity* was pleased to make Man, the Chief and Lord of all earthly Creatures, he did not say as in the making of other Creatures, Let there be a Man, but let *Us*, the *Father*, *Son*; and *Holy Ghost*, make Man; and let *Us* make him as like unto Ourselves, who are all of the *same Likeness*, as a Creature can be made. All which might be, as in effect it was, most truly and properly said, according to our common way of speaking: Whereas, if there were not *several Divine Persons* then in Being, or but only *One*, to whom could God say, let *Us* make Man; who but a *Divine Person* could do such a work? Or how could he say, let *Us* make him in *Our Image*, after *Our Likeness*, if there was only *one Person* in the World, in whose *Image* and *Likeness* he could be made? No, all the Wit of Man, and of the Devil himself, can never invalidate the invincible Force of this

this place, to prove that there were *several Divine Persons* of the same *Divine Essence*, that severally exerted and discovered themselves in the *Creation* of the World in general, and particularly in the Making of Mankind.

And as it was in the Creation, so it was likewise in the Redemption of Mankind. The World was made by the *Word* of God; and it was redeemed by the same *Word*, the Son of God, the *Second* of the *Divine Persons*, which St. John calls *the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost*, 1 John 5. 7. All which, as I have shewn, cooperated in the making of Man at first; and so they did too in the *saving* and *redeeming* him, when he was fallen from the State in which he was at first made. For whereas there were two most critical times appointed for the effecting our *Redemption*: One for the *Incarnation* of our *Redeemer* when the *Word* was made *Flesh*, and *dwelt among us* in order to it; and the other for his *Baptism*, when he was initiated as it were into it, and actually took this great Work upon him. At both these times we find all the Persons of the most Glorious *Trinity* particularly mentioned, as concerned in it.

Trinity in Unity manifested in the Redemption of Mankind.

As for the First, when the Fulness of time was come, that the Son of God



Vol. I. should be incarnate, God sent the Angel *Gabriel* to acquaint the Blessed Virgin, that He should be conceived and born of her : And among other things saith unto her, *The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the Power of the highest shall over-shadow thee, therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God*, Luke i. 35. Upon the saying of which Words, and the blessed Virgin's expressing her consent by saying, *Behold the Handmaid of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word*; This great Work was done, the *Son of God* was conceiv'd in her, the *Word was made Flesh*. Now here we see *three Divine Persons* concurring in this wonderful Work. The *Son of God*, the *Holy Ghost* or *Spirit* of God, and the *Highest* or the *Father*, whose *Son* the one, and whose *Spirit* or *Power* the other is. *One* was conceived: He was conceived by *another*, and that other was the *Power* of a Third Person. So that in this the first thing that was actually done in order to our Redemption, and upon which the whole Work depended; the whole *Three Persons* in the most Blessed *Trinity*, were most graciously pleased to shew themselves; The *Father*, the *Son*, and the *Holy Ghost*, One God, Blessed for ever.

And

And so they did likewise most wonderfully at the *Baptism* of our Redeemer, when he was solemnly inaugurated into the Office he had undertaken for us, and accordingly began to set about it. For it is written, *And Jesus when he was Baptized, went up straight-way out of the Water, and lo, the Heavens were open'd unto him; and he saw the Spirit of God, descending like a Dove, and lighting upon him; and Lo, a Voice from Heaven, saying, This is my Beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased,* Matt. 3. 16, 17. Here all the *Three Persons* of the most Holy *Trinity*, did evidently appear together. For here was a Voice from Heaven saying, *This is my Beloved Son*, which could be no other but the Voice of the *Father*, who also declared himself to be so, by calling the other his *Son*: And then here was the *Son* of this *Father*, declared to be so by the *Father* himself: And here was also the *Spirit* of God, descending like a *Dove*, and lighting upon the *Son*, and so Anointing him to be both a *Priest*, a *Prophet* and a *King*; who is therefore most properly called the *Messiah*, or *Christ*, the *Anointed* of God, and every way qualified to be our *Mediator* and *Redeemer*. Yea, it is wonderful to observe, the *Three* infinitely Glorious *Incomprehensible Persons* were pleased up-

on this extraordinary Occasion to manifest themselves severally to the very Senses of Men, to their Eyes and Ears: For the Father was heard speaking, the Son was seen in the Nature of Man coming out of the Water; and the Holy Ghost was seen in the shape of a Dove descending and lighting upon him. And therefore we may truly say with St. Augustine, that at this time, *Apparuit manifestissima Trinitas, Pater in voce, Filius in homine, Spiritus Sanctus in columbâ*: The Trinity appeared most manifestly; the Father in a Voice, the Son in a Man, the Holy Ghost in a Dove, *Aug. in Evang. Joh. tract. 6.* And when St. Hierome, *Mysterium Trinitatis in Baptismate demonstratur: Dominus Baptizatur, Spiritus descendit in specie columba; Patris vox testimonium filio perhibentis, auditur.* The Mystery of the Trinity is demonstrated in the Baptism of Christ: the Lord is Baptized: The Spirit descendeth in the likeness of a Dove; the Voice of the Father giving Testimony to the Son, is heard, *Hieron. in Matt. 3.* And hence it is that this Chapter is appointed as a Proper Lesson at Morning upon Trinity-Sunday, because the great Mystery which we this Day Celebrate, is so plainly and fully reveal'd in it.

And

And it is much to be observ'd, that as all the *Three Divine Persons*, The *Father*, the *Son*, and the *Holy Ghost*, thus manifested themselves at the *Baptism* of our Saviour; so he himself requires, that all who would be his Disciples, should be made so by being Baptized in the Name of all the same Persons, saying to his Apostles, *Go ye therefore and teach, or make, all Nations my Disciples, Baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost*, Matt. 28. 19. So that the same *Divine Persons*, which so manifestly appeared at the *Baptism* of Christ, are all to be particularly named at the *Baptism* of every *Christian*, by Christ's own Institution. And no Man can be initiated into the Church of Christ, and so made a Christian any other way, but by being so *Baptized*: This being the only way appointed by *Christ* himself for that purpose. Who thereby hath sufficiently declared, that he will own none for his Disciples but such as are *Baptized* in the Name of all the same *Persons* which appear'd in so miraculous a manner, when he himself was Baptized: And also that our Salvation depends upon, and must be attributed unto all of them. For seeing he himself hath so order'd it, that none can be brought into a State of Salvation but by being first *Baptized* in the

~ Name of all *Three*, all *Three* must needs be acknowledged to concur in the effecting of it.

And verily that they do so, appears most evidently also from the Words of my Text. For as all these Divine Persons manifested themselves in the *Creation* of the World in general, and at the making of Man in particular: As they appear'd at the *Incarnation* and *Baptism* of our Redeemer; and as our Redeemer himself requires that all who would partake of that Redemption which he hath purchased, should be Baptized in the Name of all *Three*: So the Apostle here by his Direction, writing to such as were so Baptized at *Corinth*, and concluding his *Epistle* to them with an hearty Prayer, that they might have all things necessary to their Salvation, he refers all such things to *Three* Heads, and Attributes them severally to the *Three* Persons in the most Holy Trinity, and accordingly prays to each of them, saying, *The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the Love of God, and the Communion of the Holy Ghost be with you all.* So that did we but understand these Words aright, we should thereby know how to exercise our Faith in *all*, and *each* of these Divine Persons, for what is necessary to our obtaining Eternal Salvation, according to their several ways of concurring to it.


But

But for that purpose, before we enter upon the Explication of the several Parts of the Text, it will be necessary to observe some things in general about it. As first, altho' here be *Three* several Persons named, and several Properties are severally attributed to them, yet they are not several, but all *One* and *the same individual* God. This we are fully assur'd of by all those Reasons, and by all such Places of the Holy Scriptures, which demonstrate the Unity of the Godhead. As where it is said, *Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God, (our Elobim in the Plural Number) is one Lord, one Jehovah,* Deut. 6. 4. This the Son asserts of the Father and Himself, *I and the Father are one,* John 10. 30. Not *εἰς* but *ἐν ἑσμεν*, one Jehovan, one Being. And St: *John* of all three, *There are three that bear Record in Heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost, and these Three are one,* 1 John 5. 7. Where the same Word is used again, *ἐν ἑσσι, unum sunt, they are,* in the Plural Number; but they are *One* in the Singular; *One* Being, יהוה אחד *One Jehovah, One* God.

Hence, in the next place, whatsoever Perfections or Properties (except such as are purely personal) are attributed to any of these *Divine Persons*, are the same in all, and may equally be attributed to every one,

Serm. XII.

*The three Properties attributed to the three Persons argue but One God.*

Vol. I.  one, they being *all* and *every* one the same God, in whom all Perfections concentre, or rather, who is all Perfection itself. And therefore, when we read of *the Grace* of one, *the Love* of another, and *the Fellowship* of the third Divine Person, it is not to be so understood, as if these Properties were so peculiar to those Persons to which they are here attributed, that they do not belong also to the other: For they are the same in all, and may be equally attributed to one as well as another. And so they are in the Holy Scriptures. Here Grace is ascribed to the *Son*, and Love unto the *Father*: In other places, Love is ascribed to the *Son*, and Grace unto the *Father*. As where St. Paul saith, *Who shall separate us from the Love of Christ?* Rom. 8. 35. *And to know the Love of Christ, which passeth Knowledge,* Ephes. 3. 19. And St. John, *Hereby perceive we the Love of God, (the Son) because he laid down his Life for us,* 1 John 3. 16. Here Love is plainly attributed to the *Son*: And so is Grace to to the *Father*, where St. Paul saith, *By the Grace of God I am what I am,* 1 Cor. 15. 10. And, *not by fleshly Wisdom, but by the Grace of God, we have had our Conversation in the World,* 2 Cor. 1. 12. And as we here read of the *Communion*, or *Fellowship* of the *Holy Ghost*, we elsewhere read  
read

read of the *Fellowship* of the *Son*. *God is faithful*, saith the *Apostle*, *by whom ye were called unto the Fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord*, 1 Cor. 1. 9. And *St. John* saith, *Truly our Fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ*, 1 John 1. 3. Which I therefore observe, lest any should think, that we detract any thing from one Person, by attributing it to another. For whatsoever Divine Properties are attributed to any one, are thereby attributed unto all: They being all one and the same God, in whom all Properties also are one and the same Property; And therefore cannot be divided, nor belong to one more than to another, as they are in him.

But then we must observe withal, that notwithstanding this, when the Almighty Being the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, is pleased to operate upon things without him, and so to exert, and manifest himself to us, there is something particular attributed to one of these Divine Persons, more than to another. As it is plain, that it was not the Father, nor the Holy Ghost, but the Son, which took the Nature of Man upon him. It was not the Father, nor the Son, but the Holy Ghost, which at the Creation of the World *moved upon the Face of the Waters*; which at the  
Incar-



Vol. I. Incarnation of Christ, overshadowed the Blessed Virgin, and which, upon the Day of Pentecost, came down upon the Apostles. Thus, all along in the Holy Scriptures, the Father is said in a peculiar manner to be our *Maker*, the Son our *Saviour*, and the *Holy Ghost* our *Sanctifier*. And accordingly in my Text, where the Three Persons are all mention'd together with respect to us, the Apostle prays for something particular from each of them; for the Love of the Father, as he is Maker and Governour of the World; For the Grace of the Son, as he is the Saviour and Redeemer of Mankind; And for the Communion of the Holy Ghost, as he is the Sanctifier and Comforter of all the Elect People of God. Which will serve us as a Key to open the whole Mystery contain'd in these Words; as we shall see more presently.

*The Three Persons of the Trinity sometimes placed in their Essential Order;*

But here is still another thing to be observ'd in general; which is, That the Son is here plac'd before the Father, whereas Reason may seem to require that the Father should be placed first; as he is by the Son himself, commanding Baptism to be administered in the Name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost; and by his beloved Disciple, saying, *There are Three that bear Record in Heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost*, Matth. 28. 19. & John 5. 7. Accord-

According to which Order, the Apostle should have said, The Love of God the Father, and the Grace of Jesus Christ; whereas, he contrarywise puts the Son first, saying, *The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the Love of God:* Which being done by the special Direction of the Holy Ghost, there was certainly great Reason for it. Which that we may rightly understand, we must take notice, that in the Places before-quoted, the Divine Persons are named in their essential Order, that which they have in, and among themselves, or with Respect to one another: According to which, the Father is placed first, because he begot the Son: The Son is placed second, because he was begotten of the Father: And the Holy Ghost last, because he proceeds from both. But the *Apostle* in my *Text*, speaks not of the Order of the Divine Persons among themselves, but of that which they observe with respect to us and our Salvation. He here wisheth to the *Corinthians*, all things necessary to their Salvation by Christ: and therefore it was necessary that he should begin first with Christ their Saviour, without whom they could never have had either the Love of God, or the Communion of the Holy Ghost. It is true, the Love of God the Father, was the first Cause, or Motive of our Salvation,

*Sometimes  
in that re-  
speaking our  
Salvation.*

as

Vol. I. as our Saviour himself hath taught us, saying, *That God so loved the World, that He gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him might not perish, but have everlasting Life*, John 3. 16. But then we must observe, that our Saviour speaks here of God's Love to Mankind in general, saying, *God so loved the World*: He doth not speak of his Love to particular Men. It was out of his infinite Love to Fallen Man in general, that *he sent his Son into the World*; but his Love to any particular Man is only in, and for the Sake of his said Son, and no otherwise. For by Nature, we are all Enemies to God, and therefore he is so to us. And there is no way for us to be reconcil'd to him, or to have him reconcil'd to us, but by his Son. For, as the Apostle saith, *When we were Enemies, we were reconcil'd to God by the Death of his Son*, Rom. 5. 10. And if it be by his Son only that we are reconcil'd to God, it must needs be only by his Son, that we can have his Love and Favour: Which he therefore never shews to any Man, but only upon the Account of *him in whom he is well pleased*. But as the Apostle saith, *Nothing can separate us from the Love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord*, Rom. 8. 39. Whereby we are given to understand, that the

the Love which God the Father hath for any of us, is only in his Son, and for his Sake, without whom we could expect nothing but Wrath and Vengeance from him: And by consequence, that the Grace of Christ is most properly here placed before the Love of God, seeing we cannot have this, unless we have that first. The same may be said also of the Communion of the Holy Ghost: For that likewise is *shed on us abundantly thro' Jesus Christ our Lord*, as the same Apostle teacheth us, *Tit. 3. 5.* Wherefore, seeing that we can never have either the Love of God the Father, or the Communion of God the Holy Ghost, but only by the Grace of God the Son, there was all the Reason in the World that the Apostle should pray for this first, and say first, *The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ*; then *the Love of God*; and lastly, *the Communion of the Holy Ghost be with you all.*

Serm.  
XII.

These things being thus premised in general, we shall easily discover the Meaning of the several Parts of the *Text*. The first thing which the Apostle here wisheth to the *Corinthians*, is, *the Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ*, which is a Phrase he delights in very much; The common Salutation that he useth at the beginning of every one of his thirteen Epistles, to those he wrote to, runs thus, *Grace be to you, and Peace*

The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, is the Mercy, as He is our Redeemer.

Vol. I. *Peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.* And at the End of his Epistles, he sometimes saith in short, *Grace be with you*, Col. 4. 18. Tit. 3. 15. 1 Tim. 6. 21. 2 Tim. 4. 22. But most usually he concludes with, *The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you*, Rom. 16. 24. 1 Cor. 16. 23. Gal. 6. 18. Phil. 4. 23. 1 Thess. 5. 28. 2 Thess. 3. 18. Philem. v. 25. And so St. John concludes the Book of Revelations, and the whole *New Testament*, Apoc. 22. 21. From whence we may infer that Grace is to be had only by Christ, that his Grace is the greatest Blessing that can be desir'd, and that where the Grace of Christ is, there is also the Love of God, and the Communion of the Holy Ghost, which are therefore particularly mention'd in my *Text*, that we may know from whence they come, and that they are to be understood, wheresoever the Grace of Christ is mention'd.

But then the Question is, what is meant by the Grace of the *Lord Jesus Christ*? And how it comes to be so often appropriated unto him? For which it will be necessary to consider that remarkable Passage in the Gospel of St. *John*, where he having asserted the Eternal and Divine Nature of the *Word* or *Son* of God, he saith: *And the Word was made Flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his Glory, the Glory*

as

as of the Only-Begotten of the Father) full of Grace and Truth.—And of his Fulness have all we received, and Grace for Grace. For the Law was given by Moses, but Grace and Truth came by Jesus Christ, John 1. 14, 16, 17. Here we see first, that the Word or Son of God was made Flesh, that is, he took upon him the Nature of Man in general, so as to become *Emmanuel*, God with us, God and Man in one Person; and as such, he is here said to be full of Grace and Truth: Where by Grace, I do not question but we are to understand, that which in the Old Testament is called *חַסֵּד* Mercy; these two *חַסֵּד וְאֱמֻנָה* Mercy and Truth, being very frequently put together, Mercy always before Truth. As where it is said, *All the Paths of the Lord are Mercy and Truth*, Psalm 25. 10. *Mercy and Truth are met together*, Psalm 85. 10. *By Mercy and Truth, Sin is purged*, Prov. 16. 6. *Mercy and Truth preserve the King*, Prov. 20. 28. Thus they are joined together, Gen. 32. 10. 2 Sam. 2. 6. c. 15. 20. Psal. 36. 5. and 40. 11. and 57. 3. 10. and 61. 7. and 89. 1, 2, 14. and 98. 3. and 100. 5. and 115. 1. and 138. 2. and 117. 2. Prov. 3. 3. c. 14. 22. *Thus God proclaimeth himself to be abundant in Goodness and Truth*, Exod. 34. 6. where the Word which we translate Goodness, is the same which in the places before

D d

quoted,

quoted, is render'd Mercy, and so it is rightly translated in that parallel place: *But thou, O Lord, art a God full of Compassion, and Gracious; Long-suffering and Plenteous in Mercy and Truth*, Plal. 86. 15. And accordingly God the Son, as Incarnate, is here said to be full of Grace, or Mercy, and Truth. *And of his Fulness*, saith Saint *John*, *all we have received*. We have none but what we receive from him, and how much soever we receive, he is still full: As the Sun is still full of Light, notwithstanding that we continually receive and enjoy it. Neither do we only receive of his Fulness in general, but we receive Grace for Grace, that is, all manner of Grace, according to that Fulness which is in him. In him is the Fulness and Perfection of, all Grace and Mercy: And for that it is in him our Head, we of him receive whatsoever Grace or Mercy we have occasion for.

And the Reason is, because, as it here follows, *The Law was given by Moses, but Grace and Truth came by Jesus Christ*. The Law, as given by *Moses*, threatned Death and Damnation, even all manner of Judgment without Mercy, to all that continued not in all things written in it. Which no Man having done, all are by the Law condemn'd to die, and suffer all the Punishments which are there threatned, without  
any

any Hopes of Mercy, there being none there promis'd. But as the Law was thus given by *Moses*, Grace, or Mercy, and Truth came, *Ex vero*, was made by *Jesus Christ*, as the Author and Procurer of it. The Law hath concluded all under Sin, and therefore hath passed the Sentence of Condemnation upon all. And if the Sentence be ever revoked or omitted, or if it be not actually executed, it must be acknowledg'd to be a great Mercy. But there is no such *Mercy* promised in the Law given by *Moses*: There is not a Word of that there, nor any where else, but only in the Gospel of *Christ*; who having in our Nature undergone the Punishments, to which we are condemn'd by the Law, he hath thereby made way for Mercy to be shewn us, by God's accepting of his Death in stead of ours, and so acquitting or discharging us from it: Yea, he hath thereby merited or purchased Mercy for us, all manner of Mercy, in that his Death was of infinitely more Value, than all ours could ever have been. For that God is never merciful to any but only for the sake of his Son, and upon the account of his Death, is plain from his never shewing any Mercy, but only to those for whom *Christ* dy'd. The fallen Angels stand in as much need of Mercy as fallen Man, but they never had, nor



ever will have any, because Christ did not die for them. But he having taken our Nature upon him, and in it suffer'd the Punishments, which by the Law were due to us, God is graciously pleas'd for his sake to promise Grace or Mercy to us; and whatsoever Grace or Mercy we receive from him, it comes to us only by Jesus Christ: As the Holy Ghost here assures us, saying, *That Grace and Truth came by Jesus Christ.* It was in him that Grace was at first promised to us, and it is in him that such Promises are verified or fulfilled. For, as the Apostle saith, *all the Promises of God in him are yea, and in him Amen,* 2 Cor. 1. 20. that is, in him they were all made, and in him they are all confirmed and performed to us. And therefore Truth is not here oppos'd as it is commonly thought, only to the Types and Figures of the Law, but it signifies more especially the Truth and Certainty of the Promises, which God hath made to Mankind of Grace and Mercy in his Son. And that is the Reason, that Mercy, as I observ'd before, is not only here, but all along in the Holy Scriptures, put before Truth: Because Mercy is first promised, and then truly granted according to that Promise, and both by Christ. It was by him that Grace was at first promised to us, and it is by him that the Truth

Truth of such Promises is assured to us, and so both *Grace and Truth came by Jesus Christ*, *Vide* Psal. 89. 33, 34, 49.

From hence we may gather, what is here meant, by *the Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ*, in my Text. It is the Grace, the free, undeserved Favour and Mercy; it is the Grace of the Lord, the Almighty God, the Eternal and Only-Begotten Son, of the same Substance and Glory with the Father; it is the Grace of the Lord Jesus, the most high God made Man, and so become Jesus, a Saviour to save his People from their Sins: It is the Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, of God our Saviour, anointed to be to us a *Prophet*, a *Priest*, and *King*, and so fully qualified, and able to do all things necessary for our Salvation. And therefore all such things are here signified by the Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ: All things that are required, all things that can any way conduce to our Eternal Salvation; they are all contain'd in, and they all proceed from his Grace and Mercy to us, without whom we can neither have, nor do any thing at all towards it. But by him, there is nothing but we may have, nothing but we can do, that he would have us, in order to our being saved. By him we are called out of *Darkness into his marvellous Light*, Rom. 1. 6. 1 *Pet.* 2. 9. By him we have Grace to  
D d 3 Repent

Vol. I. Repent, and turn every one from his own Iniquities, so that *Sin shall not have Dominion over us, seeing we are not under the Law, but under Grace*, Acts 5. 31. c. 3. 26. Rom. 6. 14. *By him we have Redemption through his Blood, the Forgiveness of Sins, according to the Riches of his Grace*, Eph. 1. 7. Col. 1. 14. Eph. 4. 32. *By him we are justified freely thro' his Grace, and accounted Righteous before God himself*, Rom. 3. 24. Tit. 3. 7. 2 Cor. 5. 21. *By him being justified by Faith we have Peace with God, and are as perfectly reconciled unto him, as if he had never been angry or displeased with us*, Rom. 5. 1, 10. *By him we have Power to become the Sons of God, and if Sons, then Heirs, Heirs of God, and Joint-Heirs with him who is Heir of all Things*, John 1. 12. Rom. 8. 17. Heb. 1. 2. *By him we are washed from our Sins in his own Blood, and are made Kings and Priests to God and his Father*, Rev. 1. 5, 6. *By him we can overcome the World, and triumph over Death it self*, 1 John 5. 4, 5. 1 Cor. 15. 57. *By him we can do, and by him we can suffer whatsoever God sees good to lay upon us: For his Grace is alway sufficient for us, and his Strength made perfect in our Weakness, so that we can do all things through Christ which strengthens us*, 2 Cor. 12. 9. Phil. 4. 13. *By him we have a Place prepared for us in Heaven, that where*

where he is there we may be also, to behold his Glory, and be glorified together with him, John 14. 2, 3. c. 17. 24. Rom. 8. 17. In short, by him we may have every thing that is any way necessary, either to the beginning, the carrying on, or the perfecting our Salvation; For he is able to save to the utmost all that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make Intercession for them, Heb. 7. 25. All these things we have by Christ, and receive them of that Infinite Grace and Mercy that is in him. And therefore the Apostle wishing to the *Corinthians*, *The Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ*, he thereby wished them every thing relating to their Eternal Salvation, as coming wholly and solely from his Grace and Mercy.

Serm. XII.

The next thing that follows in my Text, is, *the Love of God*. And it may well follow upon, *The Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ* here, for it doth so every where. For he, the Eternal Son of God, having, as I have shewn, reconciled us to his Father, where-so-ever his Grace is, the Love of the Father follows in course, who being always well-pleas'd with all that partake of him; and hath a special Love for them: The Love of a Father to his Children, who is not only most tenderly affected towards them, but takes particular care of them, provides all things necessary for them, corrects them

*The Love of God, is the paternal Affection, or Favour of the Father towards his Adopted Children, in Christ Jesus,*

Vol. I. when they do amiss, encourages them when they do well, and settles a sufficient Maintenance upon them, that they may live comfortably in the World, according to every one's Estate and Quality. Such is the Love of the great God to those, who by the Grace of Christ are made his Children. He keeps them always under his own Care and Conduct: He gives them all Things necessary, both for Life and Godliness: He *chasteneth them, not for his own Pleasure, but for their Profit, that they may be Partakers of his Holiness*: He plentifully rewards all the Services they perform him in this World: And in the next he settles a Kingdom upon every one of them, the Kingdom of Heaven it self, where they ever live as happily as it is possible for Creatures to live: And all because he loves them as his own Children by Adoption, and the Grace of his Only-Begotten Son.

This therefore is here meant by the Love of God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, and in him our God, and our Father. It is the Love of God, as he is the Maker, Preserver and Governour of the whole World, and orders and disposeth of all things in it, according to his own Will and Pleasure; and therefore as for his own Glory, so likewise for the good of these he lives and is well-pleased with them. For we know, saith the Apostle, *That all things work together for good to them*

*them that love God, to them who are called according to his purpose, Rom. 8. 28.* All that love God, God loves: And seeing he loves them, he makes all things concur to their Advantage. For which purpose by his good Providence he makes them of such a Temper as will best suit with the Circumstances he designs for them, or else orders their Circumstances so as will best suit with the Temper he made them of: He measures out such a Proportion of the good things of this Life to them, as he knows will be good for them, and no more. He allots them such a Place to live in upon Earth, where they may enjoy the Means whereby to obtain Grace and Salvation by his Son. He keeps them from falling into any Evil, and all Evil from falling upon them. He defends them from all their Enemies, or else turns their Hearts, and makes them to become their Friends. He infatuates the Counsels, and defeats all the ill Designs that Men or Devils can form against them. He hears the Prayers they put up unto him in his Son's Name, and for his sake accepts of all the Duties they perform to him. He is with them wheresoever they are, to direct, assist, and prosper them in whatsoever they do. He sanctifieth and bleaseth all manner of Occurrences to them, so that every thing which happens, is, all things consider'd, the best that could happen to them.

them. There are many, I may truly say, innumerable such Instances of the Love which God the Father is pleased for his Son's sake, to manifest to those who are Regenerate, and so made his Children in him, even by his ordinary Providence: And where that fails, he is pleased to do it in an extraordinary and miraculous manner: As we see in the Children of *Israel*, for he having a special Love for them, by reason of their near Relation to his Son incarnate, he brought them into, and out of *Egypt*; he led them, he fed them, he clothed them, with Miracles for Forty Years together. *And all because he loved them*, as it is said, *Deut. 4. 37. Chap. 7. 7, 8.* And particularly, when *Balaam* was hired to curse them, *God turned his Curse into a Blessing, because he loved them, Deut. 23. 5.*

Thus he one way or other always preserves those he loves from all Things that may hurt them, and with-holds nothing from them that will really do them good: But he carries them thro' all *the Changes and Chances of this Mortal Life*, so as to bring them at last to Heaven, where they clearly see his Love in every thing that ever befel them, continually praise and adore him for it, and are eternally happy in the perfect enjoyment of it. From all which it appears,  
how

how great a Blessing it is, to have the Love of God the Father, the Almighty Creator and Governour of all Things, how necessarily it follows upon the Grace of his Only-Begotten Son; and by consequence, with how great Reason, as well as Charity to the *Corinthians*, the Apostle here, next to the *Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ*, prays they might have the Love of God.

And that their Happiness might be compleat, he adds also, *The Communion of the Holy Ghost*, the Third Person in the most Blessed Trinity; called the *Ghost*, or *Spirit*, both of the Father and the Son, because he proceeds from both: And *Holy* in a peculiar manner, because all the Holiness that is in the Creatures, proceeds from him. And to have *Communion* or *Fellowship* with him, is to partake of his Holiness, and of all the glorious Effects of the Grace of Christ, and the Love of God in him. *For as he proceedeth both from the Father and the Son, both the Father and the Son act by him*; and therefore he is called *the Finger of God*, Luke 11. 20. The *Father* acteth by him, in the Government of the World, and all the Parts of it: The *Son*, in the Government of the Church, and all particular Members in it. And whatsoever Blessings we receive from the Father, thro' the Merits and Mediation of the Son, they are all convey'd to us by the *Holy Ghost*, which

The Communion of the Holy Ghost, is a Participation of his Holiness, and of the Effects of the Grace of Christ, and Love of God in him.



Vol. I. which for that purpose abides with us for ever, *John* 14. 16. It is he, as proceeding from, and sent by our Saviour to do it, *That enlightens our Minds, and teacheth us all things necessary to our everlasting Peace*, *Eph.* 1. 17. *Isa.* 11. 2. *John* 14. 26. It is he that keepeth us from Error, Heresy, and Schism, and guides us into all Truth, both in Faith and Manners, *John* 16. 13. It is he that sanctifies, renews, and regenerates us, and so makes us new Creatures, and the Children of the most high God, *2 Thes.* 2. 13. *John* 3. 5, 6, 8. *Tit.* 3. 5. It is he that beareth Witness with our Spirits, that we are the Children of God, *Rom.* 8. 16. It is he that mortifies the Deeds of the Body, that quickens our Souls, and worketh in us, both to will and to do, of his good Pleasure, *Rom.* 8. 13. *John* 6. 63. *Phil.* 2. 13. It is he that endues Men with Spiritual Gifts, suitable to the Work which God requires of them: To one he gives the *Word of Wisdom*, to another the *Word of Knowledge*, to another *Faith*, to another the *Gift of Healing*, to another the working of *Miracles*, to another *Prophecy*, to another the discerning of *Spirits*, to another divers kinds of *Tongues*, to another the *Interpretation of Tongues*, *1 Cor.* 12. 8, 9, 10. It is he that produceth in us *Love, Joy, Peace, Long-suffering, Gentleness, Goodness, Faith, Meekness, Temperance*, which are therefore said to be the *Fruit*

Fruit of the Spirit, *Gal. 5. 22, 23.* And so is all manner of Goodness and Vertue, where-soever it is found among Men, it all springs from the good Spirit of God, as from its Root; and from thence also receives all its Nourishment, Increase and Strength, *Eph. 3. 16.* It is he also that is our only *Comforter*, who supports and cheers our Spirits, by manifesting God's Love and Favour to us, lifting up the Light of his Countenance upon us, keeping our Hearts fixed upon our promised Inheritance, filling us with firm Hopes, and constant Expectations of it, and so giving us Peace, and Joy, and Satisfaction of Mind in whatsoever happens here below, *John 16. 7. Acts 9. 31. Rom. 14. 17, &c.* In short, whatsoever Direction, Assistance or Power we have, or can have, of thinking, or desiring, or speaking, or doing any thing that is truly good, it is communicated to us by the *Spirit* of God our Saviour, and therefore is all comprehended under this one great *Blessing* which the Apostle here wisheth for in the last place, even the *Communion* of the Holy Ghost.

The several parts of the Text being thus explain'd, we may easily observe the meaning of the whole to be this, That the Apostle here prays that the *Corinthians* might have, *First*, the Grace of God the Son; that is, all the Mercy which he, as the Redeemer of Mankind, had purchased for them with his Blood:  
*Secondly*,

Vol. I. *Secondly*, that they might have the Love of God the Father; that is, all the Favours which he, as the supreme Governour of the World, could shew them. And *Thirdly*, that they might have the *Communion* of the Holy Ghost; that is, all the Gifts, Graces, and Comforts which he could communicate unto them, both from the Father and the Son: Or in short, that they might have all things, that God the Son, or God the Father, or God the Holy Ghost could do for them, according to their several ways of working in the World; that is, all things that could any way contribute to make them completely happy. All which, *David* also, or the Church by him, prays for in the same Method and Order, saying, God, אלהים. *be merciful unto us, and bless us, and cause his Face to shine upon us, Pſal. 67. 1.*

*The Necessity of Believing in the Trinity.*

Now from hence we may learn, how necessary it is to believe in the most Blessed Trinity, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, Three Persons, One God: Seeing they all are pleased to concern themselves so much about us, and our Happiness depends upon them all. Hence we may learn to confide and trust on all and every one of these Divine Persons, for all things relating to our Happiness and Salvation. Hence we may learn what infinite Cause we have to praise and adore God for his infinite Goodness

ness to us poor Mortals, upon Earth, and to sing with the Choire of Heaven, *Holy, holy, holy, is the Lord of Hosts, the whole Earth is full of his Glory, Isa. 6. 3.*

Hence we may learn, how much we are oblig'd to serve, and love, and please God, the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost, who is thus infinitely gracious, and loving, and bountiful unto us. Hence we may learn, what great Reason our Church had to appoint, that at the end of every Psalm, as well as upon other Occasions, we should say or sing, *Glory be to the Father, and to the Son, and to the Holy Ghost.* Hence, lastly, we may learn, wherefore our Church concludes her daily Prayers, as the Apostle doth this *Epistle*, with the Words of my Text, even because they contain in short, all that we can pray for, and are in effect the same the Form which God himself prescribed, wherewith the Priests should bless the People. On this wise, saith he, ye shall bless the Children of *Israel*; *The Lord bless thee and keep thee. The Lord make his Face to shine upon thee, and be gracious unto thee. The Lord lift up his Countenance upon thee, and give thee Peace, Numb. 6. 24, 25, 26.* Where *Jehovah*, the Lord, is thrice repeated, and in the Original, hath in each place a several Accent, to denote, as the Jews themselves acknowledge, some great Mystery;

416 *The Sacerdotal Benediction, &c.*

Vol. I. **ry**; which can be no other but the most Blessed Trinity. All the three Persons whereof are here called, every one, the Lord, *Jehovah*. The Father is placed first: But the Blessings bestow'd severally by each Person, are the same which are ascribed to them in my *Text*. And when the Priest pronounced this *Blessing* to the People (as we still do in the Visitation of the Sick) God promised that he himself would accordingly *blefs* them. And if you faithfully and devoutly receive it as ye ought, I do not question but he will do so now, upon my pronouncing in his Name, the same Blessing, according to this Apostolical Form in my *Text*, *The Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the Love of God, and the Communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all.* Amen.

*The Sick,  
as well as  
those in  
Health.*

**F I N I S.**

---



---

T H E

# I N D E X.

A

**A** *Abolution,*  
How practised in Spi-  
ritual Courts p. 151

*Abstinence,*  
See *Fasting.*

*Admiration,*  
Common and obvious things  
the Objects of Admiration,  
no less than unusual Ap-  
pearances 195

*Ambassadors,*  
Apostolical Ministers, Am-  
bassadors of Christ, and  
Christ of God 353

*Anabaptists,*  
Err through Adherence to  
Translations instead of Ori-  
ginal Texts 204  
Instance, *Mat.* 28. 19, 20.  
205

*Angels,*  
Present in Consecrate Places  
166

*Apostles,*  
Their Commission 4  
Their Office 9

Number filled up by *S. Mar-*  
*thias* 58  
Two more called 63  
Instituted the Office of Dea-  
cons 65  
They alone Ordain'd or  
Consecrated others to the  
Office of Priest or Bishop  
71, 73

*Arch-Deacons,*  
How many in *England* 140  
How often to Visit 142

*Arrians,*  
A just Account of their Op-  
position to the Word *isota*  
214

B

*Baptism, Publick,*  
Duly administred with us,  
124  
Whether for Adult Persons  
or Infants, *ibid.*  
Admission into the Christian  
Church *ibid.*  
Private, indulged in Case  
of Necessity 128

E e Un-

# The I N D E X.

<p>Unbaptized Persons, Hea- thens 124</p> <p><i>Benediction Sacerdotal.</i> Explained, <i>Serm.</i> XII. 399</p> <p><i>Bishops,</i> Anciently call'd <i>Apostles</i> 12 Alone can Confirm 22 Accountable for not <i>Con-</i> <i>firming</i> 23 Their Visitations Apostoli- cal 26 Bound in Duty and Inte- rest to Visit 28 They alone can Ordain or Consecrate after the Apo- stle's Example 71, 101 Persons Ordain'd by them are Commission'd by the Holy Ghost 73 Whether Bishops their Successors in Power <i>ibid.</i> or Priests 74 How many in <i>England</i> 140 How often to Visit 142</p> <p><i>Bodily Worship,</i> Part of that Adoration re- quired of us by God 171 Warranted by the New Te- stament as well as Old 174 recommended by the Church Militant and Triumphant 178 by no means Superstitious, as some profanely term it <i>ibid.</i> Spiritual Worship without it not acceptable to God 180 Persons neglecting or de- riding it, have no Religion</p>	<p>or Sense of God upon their Minds 188 The retrieving thereof would be of great Use to the Church 191 to the State likewise 192</p> <p style="text-align: center;">C</p> <p><i>Call of Ministers by the Holy Ghost,</i> Explained 89 External and Internal 288 People not to be cheated by Pretences to an inward Call only 289</p> <p><i>Catechization</i> required by the Church of <i>England</i> 128</p> <p><i>Christ,</i> His Presence with his Mini- sters, <i>Serm.</i> I. 14, 20. Dominion over the World as God and Man 1 His Divinity cleared up 213 tho' two Natures in him, yet but one Person 216 Mankind acceptable to God by him only 258 as are all their Sacrifices 264 The Foundation Stone of his Church 261 Spiritual Sacrifices accepta- ble to God thro' him 277 'cause Christ our High- Priest, was as Man in ge- neral <i>ibid.</i> his Obedience was infi- nite, <i>ibid.</i> the Obedience of his Death so too 278 He</p>
--	--

# The I N D E X.

- He is an Heavenly Mediator *ibid.*  
 of whom we are all Partakers 278  
 in whom God is well pleased *ibid.*  
 an Intercessor for our Imperfections 281  
 and his Righteousness imputed to us *ibid.*
- Christians,**  
 True ones only capable of Salvation 111  
 always frequented Churches 167  
 most miserable if there were no Church 243  
 Christianity an Holy Priesthood, *Serm.* VIII. 263  
 have great Encouragement to do all in the Name of the Lord Jesus 283
- Church,**  
 Whence styled Apostolical 19  
 What, it is 109  
 No Salvation to be had out of it, *Serm.* IV. 112, 233  
 Miracles work'd for Men's Salvation in it 114  
 Establish'd upon a Rock, *Serm.* VII. 236  
 God's Care of it 234, 242  
 shall ever withstand the Malice of its Enemies 238  
 Stratagems to overthrow it 240
- Catholick Church,**  
 signifies Orthodox, as well as Universal 211  
 Sense of the Catholick Church to be followed 210  
 It never determin'd Truths, till denied 212  
 Instance in the *ὁμολογιᾶ* Controversy, and that of the Motherhood of the Blessed Virgin 213, 216  
 Not so liable to err as particular Christians 217
- Church of England,**  
 An Apostolical Church, 29, 78  
 perpetually Loyal 31  
 The Devil an Enemy to it 32, 246  
 God's Care of it 254  
 Her Communion not to be forsaken 38  
 for Popery 38  
 or Schism 39  
 All the Means of Grace used therein 78, 122, 152  
 Her Care that Her Ministers be not only Orthodox, but Vertuous and Good Men 98  
 Most agreeable to the Catholick Church in Doctrine and Discipline 218, 228, 285  
 Hath no Enemies or false Friends, but such as are ignorant or imprudent 229  
 Hence some are violent against her, others moderate on her Behalf 230
- Church of Rome**  
 departs from Scripture and Reason 219  
 in the Points of Transubstantiation *ibid.*
- E & 2 Pur-



# The I N D E X.

Purgatory	<i>ibid.</i>	nor neglected by the People	24
Supremacy	220	strictly required by the Church	129
<i>Church Wardens,</i>		<i>Consecration of Churches,</i>	
Their Office and Oath	141	an Act of Religion	167
How often to present	142	nothing to be done in Consecrated Places that may defecrate them	168
<i>Clergy of the Church of England,</i>		made them frequented in pious times	167
Honour'd with God's Presence in their Holy Administrations	34	<i>Consecration of Ministers,</i>	
Act by Commission from Christ	361	Mosaical, how perform'd	52
Hence not to do their Lord's Work negligently	32, 82	Evangelical, how	56
to be blameless in their Conversations	33, 315	<i>Courts. See Spiritual Courts.</i>	
to consider the Duty and Dignity of their High Calling	75	<b>D</b>	
Not to be discouraged in the Discharge of their High Trust	81	<i>Deacons,</i>	
Directions for such as are Candidates for Holy Orders	309	Instituted by the Apostles	65
Directions for such as are Ordain'd	312	Manner of their Ordination in the Church of <i>England</i>	83
<i>Communiions,</i>		after Fasting and Prayer	<i>ibid.</i>
Frequent with us	137	due Legal Qualifications	84
<i>Communion of the Holy Ghost,</i>		proper Examination and Testimonials	<i>ibid.</i>
in the Sacerdotal Benediction, is, a Participation of his Holiness, and of the Effects of the Grace of Christ, and Love of God in him	401	Impediments enquired into	86
<i>Confirmation,</i>		Renunciation of Popery	88
by Imposition of Hands, Apostolical	21, 23	and answering Questions, about their Care, Belief of the Scriptures, Diligence, Fidelity and Obedience	89, 90, 91, 92, 93
not to be refused by Bishops	23	by Imposition of Hands	94
		after	

# The I N D E X.

<p>after it they have the New Testament deliver'd to them, and Communicate 94, 104</p> <p>Their Office 94</p> <p><i>Discipline Ecclesiastical,</i></p> <p>A full Account of it as practised in the Church of <i>England</i> 140</p> <p>Discipline and Order, the Pretervatives of God's Church 239</p> <p>strictly to be observed by all Ministers 314</p> <p>Neither Papists nor Schismatics shall prevail against her 245</p> <p>though both one and t'other have attempted it 245, 248</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b>E</b></p> <p><i>Ecclesiastical Matters,</i></p> <p>See: <i>Discipline, Spiritual Courts, Officers Ecclesiastical</i></p> <p><i>Efficacy of Holy Administrations</i></p> <p>Depend upon the <i>Office</i> not the <i>Person</i> 20, 37</p> <p>on Faith, in a great Measure, <i>Serm. X.</i></p> <p><i>Episcopacy,</i></p> <p>Apostolical 12</p> <p>but one in the Church of Christ 13</p> <p><i>Excommunications,</i></p> <p>when to be issued out 140, 151</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b>F</b></p> <p><i>Faith,</i></p> <p>in the Word Preach'd makes</p>	<p>it efficacious 317</p> <p>a firm Belief of the Apostles Creed, efficacious on the Hearers of God's Word 333</p> <p>Instance,</p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;"><i>Art. I.</i> 333</p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;">II. 335</p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;">III. 336</p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;">IV. 337</p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;">V, VI, VII, 339</p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;">VIII, IX, 342</p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;">X, XI, XII. 343</p> <p>Another Instance of the Efficacy of Faith, from a Summary of God's Word 346</p> <p><i>Fasting,</i></p> <p>Enjoyed by the Church at set Seasons 133</p> <p>in <i>Lent</i> <i>ibid.</i></p> <p>on <i>Rogation Days</i> 132</p> <p>in the <i>Ember week.</i> <i>ibid.</i> 278</p> <p>all <i>Fridays</i> 133</p> <p>and Eves of <i>Holy-days</i> <i>ibid.</i></p> <p>a Preparatory Duty for Ordination 290</p> <p>the Necessity of it for the Church, and Candidates 301, 310</p> <p>as it influences the Soul 292</p> <p>and Body, to good 293</p> <p>Suppressing Gluttony, Drunkenness, Luxury, Uncleanness, Self-Love, Covetousness 294, 295</p> <p>promoting Holy Exercises 296</p> <p>and is pleasing to God 297</p> <p style="text-align: right;">E e 3     who</p>
---	---

# The I N D E X.

who hath promised a Reward to't 298  
 The Reward of Fasting and Abstinence *ibid.*  
 Necessary for all Ministers towards the due Discharge of their Office 313

## Festivals.

The Observance of them enjoyed by the Church 134

The *Lord's-Day* *ibid.*

Other *Holy-days* *ibid.*

## A Form of Sound Words,

to be used by Ministers, *Serm. VI.*

such given by *St. Paul* to *Bishop Timothy* 198

with respect to Doctrine and Discipline 199

to be ever used in the Explication of Divine Truths revealed in the Gospel 200

the same sound Words to be used in expressing Articles of Faith, as *St. Paul* gave to *Timothy* 201

Scriptural Words the best Preservative against Heresy and Schism 202, 210

New-Coin'd Words dangerous in Theological Affairs 226

to be avoided by the Orthodox 227

especially the Clergy *ibid.*

## G

*Godfathers and Godmothers,* required as Witnesses,

Proxies, or Sureties 125

*Government of the Church,*

by Bishops, Apostolical 24

by Bishops, &c. Ministerial only 26

when constituted by Christ 57

## Grace,

all the Means of it used in the Church of *England* 78

the Grace of Christ, signifies Mercy in the Sacerdotal

Benediction 399

## H

### Heresy,

Scriptural Words the best Preservative against it 202, 210

The Devil's Engine for ruining the Church 241

### Hereticks

always pretend Scripture on their Side 203

'cause they converse with Translations chiefly, not

Original Texts 203

so the Papists 204

so the Anabaptists *ibid.*

or, are not acquainted with the Jewish History,

Context, or Scope of the Sacred Oracles 206

so most of the Ancient and Modern Hereticks 207

or, understand not the things signified by Scri-

ptural Words, and therefore reject them as too

high,

# The I N D E X.

high, and mysterious, and  
 divine *ibid*  
 Pervert Scripture, 'cause  
 all Revelation must stoop  
 to their Level 209  
 New-fangled Words used  
 chiefly by them in Theolo-  
 gical Matters 226

## I

*Jews,*  
 their Doctrine about the  
 Trinity blasphemous and  
 nonsensical 386  
*Imposition of Hands,*  
 Primitive 17  
 used in the ordering of  
 Priests and Deacons 18, 64,  
 94, 100, 287, 290  
 at Confirmation 21  
 the Spirit given by it 68,  
 70, 72

## L

*Laitie in the Church of England,*  
 their Duty to the Church  
 35, 153, 231  
 their Duty to the Ministers  
 35, 77, 106  
 not to have Mens Persons  
 in Admiration 36  
 not to forsake its Commu-  
 nion 38  
 neither for Popery 38  
 nor for Schism 42  
 to live up to the Rules and  
 Constitutions of it 44, 153,  
 231  
 to be blamed, if there are

any unworthy Ministers  
 87, 137  
*Liturgy,*  
 of the Establish'd Church,  
 an edifying one 136  
 Abreviate of it *ibid.*  
*Lord's-day,*  
 Observation of it in the  
 Church of *England* 134  
*Lots,*  
 Ecclesiastical use of them 58  
*Love of God,*  
 in the Sacerdotal Benedicti-  
 on, is the Paternal Affecti-  
 on of the Father towards  
 his adopted Children in  
 Christ Jesus 397  
*Loyalty,*  
 Church of *England* famous  
 for it 31, 154  
 secured by the true Wor-  
 ship of God, external, as  
 well as internal 192

## M

*Mahometans,*  
 and *Socinians* equally cen-  
 sured 215  
*Means,*  
 lawful ones only to be  
 used for the Preservation of  
 God's Church 254  
*Ministers,*  
 Christ's Presence with them,  
 to the end of the World,  
*Serm. I.* 14  
 Ordination of them Apo-  
 stolical 16  
 The Institution of Mini-  
 sters, *Serm. II.*

E c 4 Ne-

# The I N D E X.

- Necessity of them 48  
 Their Call 49  
 Danger of undertaking the  
 Offices without a Call, *ibid.*  
 360  
 Who called so under the  
 old Dispensation 51  
 Three distinct Orders of  
 them there 52  
 The manner of their Con-  
 secration 52  
 Who called to be Ministers  
 under the Gospel 54  
 Three distinct Orders of  
 them too 55  
 The manner of their Con-  
 secration 56  
 The Method of Ordaining  
 them in the Church of  
*England*, see at large from  
 page 80 to 106  
 When called by the Holy  
 Ghost to their Offices 89  
 to consider their Ordinati-  
 on-Vows 109  
 to Fast before, and after  
 Ordination 59  
 Ambassadors of Christ, *Ser-*  
*mon II.* 353  
 their Commission the same  
 with that of the Apostles  
 357, 358  
 to them is committed the  
 Word of Reconciliation  
 365  
 they are not to be con-  
 temn'd under Penalty of  
 God's Indignation 363  
 who so despiseth them de-  
 spiseth Christ *ibid.*
- Mysteries,*  
 as plainly revealed as things  
 of that Nature can be 208  
 Men blameable for reject-  
 ing them, Why? 209  
 whence Hereticks pervert  
 the Scriptures on the ac-  
 count of Mysteries *ibid.*
- O
- Officers Ecclesiastical,*  
 Lay-Chancellors of an an-  
 cient Date 147  
 warranted by Laws of  
 Church and State 149  
 Appeals from them to the  
 Prince *ibid.*
- Ὁμολογία,*  
 a true and brief Account of  
 the Controversy about that  
 Word 213
- Ordination of Ministers,*  
 Apostolical 16  
 Nature of it, what 48  
 always performed by the  
 Bishops or Governors of  
 the Church, tho' the Men  
 were called to the Mini-  
 stry by the Holy Spirit  
 63, 101  
 and that by Imposition of  
 Hands 64  
 Method of it in the Church  
 of *England* 83, &c.  
 Preparatory Duties for Ho-  
 ly Orders 285  
 See Priests and Deacons.
- Ordination Vows. See Vows,*  
*Phanaticks,*

# The I N D E X.

## P

*Phanaticks,*  
 and Papiſts equal Enemies  
 to the Eſtabliſhed Church  
 and Government 252

*Popery,*  
 no true Chriſtianity 38  
 the Word of God of little  
 effect there 40  
 the Sacraments to as little  
 purpoſe 41  
 its Supremacy invalidated  
 7, 13, 220, 234  
 its Tranſubſtantiation, im-  
 poſſible, unſcriptural 41,  
 219  
 its Prayers in an unknown  
 Tongue, unedifying 39  
 Miniſters of the Church of  
*England*, renounce it at  
 their Ordination 88  
 gives to the Creature what  
 is due only to the Creator  
 160  
 in Adoration of Images,  
 expreſly againſt the Fourth  
 Commandment 188  
 is erroneous thro' its ad-  
 herence to Tranſlations, not  
 the Original Text 204  
 Inſtances in *Gen.* 3. 15.  
*Eph.* 5. 32. 204  
 Purgatory ſtated there a-  
 gainſt Scripture and Reason  
 160  
 the Tyranny of it to be  
 feared no more 235  
 an utter Enemy to Eſta-  
 bliſhed Proteſtancy 245

See Church of *Rome*.

*Power of the Keys,*  
 how given to the Apoſtles  
 and their Succeſſors 25  
 how uſed in our Church  
 150

*Prayer,*  
 a Duty preparatory to Ho-  
 ly Orders 290, 304, 310  
 Churches, Houſes of Prayer  
 163

*Prieſts or Presbyters,*  
 their Inſtitution Apoſtoli-  
 cal 19  
 Jeſus Chriſt a Prieſt 55  
 cannot Ordain others 71  
 have the Holy Ghoſt con-  
 ferred on them at their Or-  
 dination 74

Method of Ordaining them  
 in the Church of *Eng-  
 land* 83

at four Ember Seasons,  
 after Faſting and Prayer,  
*ibid.*

with proper Qualificati-  
 ons, according to Law 84  
 after due Examination  
 and Testimonials *ibid.*

Impediments enquired  
 into 86

Renunciation of Popery  
 88

and answering Questions  
 about their Call, Dili-  
 gence, Fidelity and Obe-  
 dience 89, 90, 91, 92,  
 93, 97

by Impoſition of Hands  
 100  
 after

# The I N D E X.

after which the Bible is delivered to them, and the Sacrament administered 104, 105  
 their Office, what 104

## R

### *Rebellion,*

the greatest one in *England* preceded by a disuse of External Reverence 193  
 such have been promoted by the Doctrine of Supremacy in the Pope too 221, 224

Rebels and Conspirators against the Church, the Devil's Tools 251

### *Reconciliation,*

the Word thereof committed to Ministers 365  
 the Notion of Reconciliation with God explained *ibid.*

Exhortation to a Reconciliation with God 368  
 for Christ's sake 371

danger of delaying Reconciliation with God 373

happines of being reconciled to God 375

## S

### *The Holy Sacrament,*

a spiritual Sacrifice 269

### *Sacrifice,*

spiritual Sacrifices acceptable to God through Christ 264, 271

Christians, when presented to God, a Sacrifice 265  
 our Devotions also 267  
 the Holy Sacrament, in an especial manner such 26

### *Salvation,*

Christ's Care for it with respect to Mankind 107  
 to be had in the Church only, according to Christ's designation, *Serm. IV.* 112, 233

Mens great neglect of it when purchased by Christ 108

true Christians only capable of it 111

Christ's Method of saving Men only in the Church to be highly regarded, as miraculous in sundry instances 113

of *Cornelius* 114

of *Queen Candace's Eunu- ch* *ibid.*

of *St. Paul's Conversion* 115

the Fathers of the Opinion that no Salvation is to be had out of Christ's Church 116

Reasons why Men can't be saved but in the Church 117

because without the Church we can't know the Gospel 117

nor believe it aright 119

nor use the Gospel-Means savingly

# The I N D E X.

- savingly 120  
 Members of our Church to live up to its Rules and Orders, Doctrine and Discipline, as they hope for Salvation 231
- Schism,*  
 puts Men in an hazardous State 42, 49  
 has no Promise of Christ's Presence at Holy Administrations 43  
 Scriptural Words the best Preservative against it 202, 210  
 the Devil's Engine to destroy the Church with 241
- Schismatics from the Church of England,*  
 in a very hazardous State 43  
 some of them in the Point of Bodily Worship against the Church of Christ, and Jesus the Head of it 187  
 too many give no more Adoration to the Creator than what may be given to the Creature 160  
 by consequence have little or no Religion, no sense of God upon their Minds 188  
 always pretend Scripture on their side 263  
 'cause they converse with Translations chiefly, not Original Texts 203  
 so the Papists 204
- so the Anabaptists *ibid.*  
 or, are not acquainted with the Jewish History, Context, or Scope of the sacred Oracles 206  
 or, understand not the things signified by Scriptural Words, and therefore reject them as too high, and mysterious, and divine 207  
 new-tangled Words used by them chiefly in Theological Matters 226
- Scripture,*  
 Scriptural Words the best Preservative against Heresy and Schism 202, 210  
 yet Hereticks and Schismatics always pretend Scripture on their side 203  
 'cause they converse with Translations chiefly, not Original Texts 203  
 so the Papists 204  
 so the Anabaptists *ibid.*  
 or, are not acquainted with the Jewish History, Context, or Scope of the sacred Oracles 206  
 so most of the ancient and modern Hereticks 207  
 or, understand not the things signified by Scriptural Words, and therefore reject them as too high, and mysterious, and divine 207  
 Hereticks pervert the Scriptures,



# The I N D E X.

- tures, because all Revelation must stoop to their Level 209
- Sermons,*  
 Religion of too many placed in hearing of them 351  
 not as the Word of God, but common Discourse 332
- Socinians,*  
 deserve not the Name of Christians 216  
 their Doctrine about the Trinity, blasphemous and nonsensical 386
- Spiritual Courts,*  
 an wholesome Constitution 143  
 their use in the Church *ibid.*  
 their Officers, Laymen, why *ibid.*  
 very ancient 147  
 legal 149  
 their Officers punishable for Misdemeanors *ibid.*  
 Appeals from them *ibid.*
- Supremacy,*  
 of the Prince, asserted 140, 149
- T**
- Trinity,*  
 the Mystery of it inexplicable 378  
 what is revealed thereupon 379  
 three Properties or Perfections of the three Persons 380  
 Trinity and Unity manifested at the Creation 381  
 against Jews and Socinians 386  
 Trinity in Unity manifested in the Redemption 387  
 three Properties attributed to three Persons, argue but one God 393  
 the three Persons sometimes placed in their essential Order 396  
 sometimes placed in Scripture as they respect our Salvation 397  
 necessity of believing in the Trinity 404  
 of serving the Trinity 405  
 of giving Glory to the Trinity *ibid.*  
 of Blessing in the Name of the Trinity *ibid.*  
 the Practice of Blessing in the Name of the Trinity, all Persons, sick and in health, commended 405, 406
- U**
- Ubiquitarianism,*  
 wild and extravagant 14
- Virgin Mary,*  
 Θεοτοκον, how 216
- Visitation of the Sick,*  
 how performed by Church Ministers 138
- Visitations of Churches,*  
 Apostolical 26  
 by Bishops and Arch-Deacons, how frequent 142
- Unity.*

# The I N D E X.

## Unity.

See Trinity.

## Vows,

at Ordination to be kept  
inviolatè 105  
to be often read over 309  
especially on Fasting days  
314

## W

### Word of God,

is the System of Divine Re-  
velation in the Old and  
New Testament 319  
how it operates upon the  
Soul, when preach'd to Be-  
lievers 321  
whether by way of Com-  
mand 322  
or Threatning 324  
or Promise 326  
or History 329  
or Affirmation 332  
address to Hearers of the  
Word, that they would be  
Doers of it likewise 348

### Word of Reconciliation.

See Reconciliation.

### Words,

the Images of Thought,  
and Foundation of Com-  
merce 196  
such as are not the Images  
of Notions to be avoided  
in Theology 197  
See a Form of found  
Words.

## Worship Religious,

the true Notion of it 55,  
170

suffers by the Church of  
*Rome's* Superstition, in gi-  
ving that to the Creature  
which is due to the Crea-  
tor 160

and by too many Prote-  
stants, in giving no more  
to the Creator, than what  
may be given to the Crea-  
ture *ibid.*

distinguish'd from the ge-  
neral Service of God 161  
why paid heretofore only  
in the Temple of *Jerusa-*  
*lem* *ibid.*

Why now in our Churches,  
as the proper places for it  
*ibid.*

'cause of God's special  
Prefence there 164

times for Religious Wor-  
ship as well as places 168  
rightly understood of great  
ule to the Church of Christ

187  
the Revival thereof would  
be beneficial to the Publick

191  
the Revival thereof would  
quash the Spirit of Sedition  
and Profaneness 192

a Security against Rebelli-  
on 193

See Bodily Worship.

E R-

---

## E R R A T A.

**F**ROM Page 80 to Page 105 in the Running Title, instead of *Institution*, read *Ordination*; p. 84 in the Marginal Notes, Line 1 for *in* read *with*; p. 105 in the Marg. N. l. 8 for *Care* read *Weight*; p. 122 Marg. N. l. 7 *there in* for *therein*; p. 128 Marg. N. l. 5 *Education* for *Eucation*; p. 195 Marg. N. for *Acts* read *Objects*; p. 221 Marg. N. l. 13 for *Scripture* read *Scripture*; p. 229 Marg. N. l. 6 for *impudent* read *imprudent*; p. 265 Marg. N. l. 3 for *present* read *presented to God*,

---

---

---

BOOKS just Published of the Right Reverend Father in God, William Beveridge, D. D. late Lord Bishop of St. Asaph, viz.

**P**Private Thoughts upon Religion, digested into twelve Articles, with Practical Resolutions form'd thereupon. Written in his younger Years for the settling of his Principles, and Conduct of his Life. The Second Edition. Price Bound 4 s.

The True Nature of the Christian Church, the Office of its Ministers, and the Means of Grace Administred by them, explain'd. In twelve Sermons. The Second Edition. Vol. I. Pr. Bound 5 s.

The Being, Love, and other Attributes of God, as our Creator, Redeemer, and Sanctifier. Illustrated in twelve Sermons. The Second Edition. Vol. II. Pr. Bound 5 s.

The Nature, Person, and Offices of Christ. In fourteen Sermons. Vol. III. Pr. Bound 5 s.

The Duties and Advantages of Christians. In thirteen Sermons. Vol. IV. Pr. Bound 5 s.

Sermons concerning the Glory of God and the Salvation of Men, and the Means of advancing the one, and obtaining the other, among which is the celebrated Sermon concerning Restitution. Vol. V. Pr. Bound 5 s.

The great Necessity and Advantage of Publick Prayer, and Frequent Communion, designed to revive Primitive Piety. Pr. Bound 3 s. 6 d.

The Church Catechism explain'd, for the Use of the Diocese of St. Asaph. Printed for *Walter Kettilby*, and sold by *Richard Wilkin* at the *King's Head* in *St. Paul's Church-Yard*. Pr. 5 s. in Quarto, and 1 s. in Twelves.

Paraphrase

## A Catalogue of BOOKS.

Paraphrase and Annotations on all St. *Paul's* Epistles, done by several Eminent Men at *Oxford*, Corrected and improved by the late Reverend and Learned Bishop *Fell*. Price 5 s.

The Antient Religion of the *Gentiles* and Causes of their Errors considered; wherein the Mistakes and Failures of the Heathen Priests, and Wise Men in their Notions of the Deity, and Matters of Divine Worship, are examin'd, with regard to their being altogether destitute of Divine Revelation; with a compleat Index. By the Learned and Judicious *Edward Lord Herbert of Cherbury*, &c. Pr. 5 s.

Several Discourses Preach'd on particular Occasions before the State, in the Cathedral Church of St. *Patrick* and *Christ Church, Dublin*. By *William Sheridan*, Lord Bishop of *Kilmoye* and *Ardagh*. Pr. 5 s.

Christian Perfection, consisting in the Love of God, explained, in several Letters to a Lady. Pr. 5 s.

*Dodwell's* Occasional Communion, fundamentally destructive of the Discipline of the Primitive Catholick Church, and contrary to the Doctrine of the latest Scriptures, concerning Church Communion, Pr. 2 s. 6 d.

— *De Schismate Anglicano Parænesis ad Exteros tam Reformatos, quam etiam Pontificios qua Jura Episcoporum vetera eorumdemque à Magistratu seculare Independemia omnibus asserenda commendantur*. Pr. 4 s.

— *Exercitationes duæ de Etate Phaleridis & Pythagora*. Pr. 2 s.

— Conference between Soul and Body. Pr. 2 s.

The New Art of Spelling, design'd chiefly for Persons of Maturity; teaching them how to spell and write Words by the Sound thereof, and to sound and read Words by the sight thereof, Rightly, Neatly and Fashionably. By *J. Jones*, M. D. Pr. 2 s. 6 d.













